



*The Story of the New
Immortals,
Part 1:*

The Beginning of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography

By

Richard O'Decatur

[Image courtesy of blackzheep at FreeDigitalPhotos.net]

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

The Beginning of the Beginning

***The Story of the New
Immortals,
Part 1:***

The Beginning of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography

By

Richard O'Decatur

Last Edit: May 2022

This Book is dedicated to my wife, Rebecca. She has been an inspirational Christian that I have learned to admire as well as love dearly. She has taught me so much about how a loving relationship functions and has filled my life with joy.

This is her last year of a teaching career that has spanned over thirty years in four states. I look forward to not having to get up before 5 AM, getting ready, eating a quick breakfast, and then driving her to her school in the pitch-black pre-dawn. She is blinded by hundreds of starburst lights from car headlights coming toward her. She can only drive when the sun tops the horizon and that happens about Two months each school year. Soon, we will be waking without an alarm clock and be free to do whatever comes to our minds. We truly enjoy each other's company and plan to keep busy as our love continues to grow.

She is first to read all my writings after I think I just about have them ready for publishing. She is kind, yet right on the money as she points out errors and offers her advice on how to make my books more readable.

Richard O'Decatur

The Beginning of the Beginning

Copyright © 2020 Richard O'Decatur (or Richard of Decatur) All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any electronic or mechanical means, including information storage and retrieval systems, without permission in writing from the author except by reviewers, who may quote brief passages in a review. Any such copying or reproduction of parts or the whole document must acknowledge the author's name, copyright, and date of authorship and may not be published without the author's written approval.

ISBN 978-1-7349940-0-1

Copyright registration approved in the Library of Congress

**Printed and bound in the United States of America
First Printing August 2020**

**Published by
R. Wayne Publishing Co.
108 Kimbrough Ct.
Clarksville, TN 37043**

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Table of Contents

Principle Characters

Prologue

Chapter 1: My Dreams

Chapter 2: The Beginning of the Beginning?

Chapter 3: The Godhead

Chapter 4: The Realm of Elohim

Chapter 5: Creation of the Great Archangels

Chapter 6: The Concept of a Physical Realm

Chapter 7: Planning the Physical Realm

Chapter 8: Creating the Earth

Chapter 9: Planning Living Creatures

Chapter 10: Covering the Earth with Living Creatures

Chapter 11: Planning Man's Creation

Chapter 12: Lucifer's Pride

Chapter 13: The Revelation of the being called Man

Chapter 14: Lucifer becomes Satan

Chapter 15: The Rebellion of Lucifer

Chapter 16: The Creation Week on Earth

Chapter 17: The Creation of Adam

Chapter 18: The Creation of Eve

Chapter 19: The Creation of the Sabbath

Chapter 20: Satan Plans His Revenge

Chapter 21: Adam & Eve Learn about Obedience
Chapter 22: As Time Passes in the Garden
Chapter 23: Eve is Tempted
Chapter 24: Eve then Adam Sins
Chapter 25: Yeshua Discovers Their Sins
Chapter 26: Death Becomes a Reality
Chapter 27: The First Family Increases
Chapter 28: Harvest Time Sacrifices to Elohim
Chapter 29: The Murder of Abel
Chapter 30: The Lineage in Cain's Line
Chapter 31: The Lineage from Seth
Chapter 32: Noah Leaves His Homeland
Chapter 33: Noah's Family Expands
Chapter 34: Elohim Plans to Destroy the Inhabitants on Earth
Chapter 35: Elohim Tells Noah to Build an Ark
Chapter 36: Building the Ark
Chapter 37: Preparing for the Voyage of the Ark
Chapter 38: Creatures Great and Small Enter the Ark
Chapter 39: The Voyage of the Ark
Chapter 40: After the Flood
Chapter 41: Nimrod Builds His Kingdom
Chapter 42: The Kingdom of Semiramis
Chapter 43: The Dividing of Languages
Chapter 44: The Calling of Abram
Chapter 45: Concluding with the Past

REFERENCES and Comments

About the Author

Books by the Author

The Beginning of the Beginning

Principle Characters

The Kingdom of Heaven

Yahweh Almighty [God the Father].

Yeshua [Jesus], the Christ and Son of Yahweh.

The Holy Spirit, the third member of the Godhead.

Michael, the great archangel who served Yahweh.

Gabriel, the great archangel and messenger of Yahweh.

Dabarel, an angel. A Fictional name.

The Kingdom of Hell

Satan, the Devil and adversary.

In the Garden of Eden

Adam, the first man created by Elohim.

Eve, the first woman created by Elohim.

The Lineage of Adam

Cain, Adam and Eve's first born.

Abel, the second son born to Adam and Eve.

Mina, a daughter of Adam and Eve, who became the wife of Cain. A Fictional name.

Seth, a son that reminded Adam and Eve of Abel.

In the Line of Seth

Enoch, whom Yeshua took up alive into heaven.

[There were many other sons and daughters born to Adam and Eve and other lineage that are not named in the Holy Scriptures.]

Methuselah, who lived for 969 years.

Noah, who with his three sons, built the Ark.
 Sehaj, Noah's wife. A Fictional name

The Lineage of Cain

Lamech, the first man that took two wives.

The Lineage of Noah

Shem, Noah's firstborn son.
 Ham, Noah's second born son.
 Japheth, Noah's third born son.

As the earth was repopulated after Noah.

Nimrod, 'the mighty hunter', a son of Cush.
 Semiramis, called the 'Queen of Heaven', Nimrod's wife.
 Tammuz, an evil son of Nimrod and Semiramis.

Peleg, the great, great grandson of Shem, who slayed Tammuz when the language was divided.

Abram, whose name was later changed to Abraham.

All the characters listed here were actual people, Deities, or angels except those that I have noted were fictional characters or names.

Prologue

Have you ever wondered about how things really began? Most people from the first grade at school forward have been feed a steady stream of Evolution and the Big Bang Theories by teachers telling them what most scientist say happened. Those that attend a Christian Church have heard how some Theologians counter that the Evolution Theory cannot explain how single cell creatures jumped the track to become multi-cell creatures. Scientist say species evolved or changed to new species yet they cannot explain the fact that any change in any species always involves a De-evolution in which it can hardly survive and usually cannot produce off-springs. Please consider that separate creatures in the plant, animal, and insect world could not have evolved when so many are co-dependent on each other in order to exist and all things had to begin at the same time. Where did matter come from to begin with. Finally, you can pop the Big Bang Bubble with one word, God.

In my writing of this story, I will use the Hebrew names of the Deity characters which I believe were Their original Hebrew names. I will add within [brackets] the modern Greek names most are acquainted with so you can become accustomed to these Hebrew names. I believe that most names of our Christian Deities have gone through a transliteration process from Hebrew to Latin and/or to Greek and finally to English. So, rather than use a two or three-step transliterated name, when possible I will simply use the English version of the Hebrew name for Deities such as Yahweh for our Heavenly Father, Yeshua for the one who became Jesus Christ, Elohim for God when referring to the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit together or when the specific deity of the Godhead is not clear.

Few who really believe in a Creator God called Elohim in Genesis chapter 1, have the audacity to actually wonder why things happened as they did. Perhaps you have not thought in such terms but enjoy hearing what others think. That is, unless they get too

weird. My background is in Engineering. Why I ended up in such a profession is simply, that is just the way I am and how I think. I generally do not accept things because everyone says that is just the way they have always been. I want to know not only how; but, why. I am generally not interested in opinion, speculation, or tradition. I desire to find out all the true facts, and then I seek to help others understand what is the truth and finally begin changes that make everything better.

While this is a good thing in business, manufacturing, and other industries as I find better ways of doing things, it causes me to get on the wrong side of church leaders who are not interested in changing from their Traditions to accept the Truth of God. In my search for answers, all my life, I have ended up with more questions than answers. My questions went deeper than what I was taught in any church I attended. When I tried to ask ministers what the scriptures meant, after a few questions, I was told either “the answers are a divine mystery”, or ‘boy, you better watch out asking about such things’. Here are a few of the questions that I sought answers.

- Why did God create this world and mankind to begin with?
- What caused Satan and one third of the angelic band to rebel?
- When did this rebellion take place?
- Why did God not destroy Satan and his rebellious followers immediately after they rebelled?
- Is the earth really only about six thousand years old?
- Does the account of the creation week actually begin in Genesis 1: 1 or 1: 3?
- Was this actually a ‘re-creation’ following a perfect creation mentioned in verse one that was destroyed?
- Did some kind of cataclysmic event take place between verse 1 and verse 2?
- Why did God leave Adam and Eve alone to be tempted by Satan?

The Beginning of the Beginning

- How did Satan deceive Eve into eating the forbidden fruit?
- Why did Adam also eat knowing he was disobeying God and would die?
- Where did the woman come from that became the wife of Cain?
- What was it like between Adam and Noah in the rest of the world?
- How did Noah and his family go about building the ark?
- What happened during the building of the tower of Babel?
- What other things were taking place during the time covered in the first twelve chapters of the Bible that covered at least two thousand years?

During my life, I have had a number of unusual things happen to me. The first of the two strangest things took place when I was about twenty-two and a half in 1968. I had a vision that I firmly believe came from God. No kidding. There is no other way to understand what happened to me. In the space of a second or less in our time, I experienced being in a number of different scenes and witnessing things and events that lasted many hours if not days. I believe that it is possible that I saw exactly how and when my life would end.

Then, early in 1994, I experience the second strangest event, another vision. I was awakened in the middle of the night. When I opened my eyes looking up toward the ceiling, I saw that there was a light in the room as bright as the sun while the night outside the window was pitch black. I sat up and saw an incredible being standing at the foot of my bed. When He raised his arms, I saw a jagged nail print in each hand, then I knew this was none other than my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. During that encounter, after I accepted Christ's invitation to be His Minister, He also made me His Apostle and Prophet as He would reveal truths to me in His Word that had been lost for the last two thousand years. I was to present

these truths to all who would listen and study His Word to see that I had spoken and written the Truth.

I will not write any further about that vision or my first vision back in 1968 as those particular things do not directly involve what I am writing about in this book. I have mentioned them only because I believe they reveal that God has a special calling for me to accomplish. Looking back on my life, I can now see that God has sustained my life so I can complete this calling.

Since my early childhood, I have been miraculously saved from death many times. Such as the time when I was nine years old and fell over twenty feet from a tree onto a pile of wooden planks torn off an old barn. These planks were piled up between a fence and a shed under the tree I had climbed. I landed flat on my back and the fall knocked the wind out of me. That was all the harm I suffered because the boards cushioned me when I landed on them. When I opened my eyes, I found it was difficult to move. Turning my head to both sides, I discovered huge six-inch-long spikes sticking out of the wooden planks so close they touched the end of my nose when I turned my head to the right or left. I raised my right hand and felt another long spike just above the top of my head. When I was finally able to rise to a sitting position, I saw a ring of long spikes sticking out and closely outlining my head, body, arms, and legs. It reminded me of a circus act where one person stands in front of a wall while another person throws knives at them. Only in my case instead of knives sticking into the wall, I had long pointed spikes sticking out of the woodpile. Honestly, had I landed as much as a half an inch in any direction from the exact position where I landed, I probably would have been impaled and killed by several six- inch-long spikes.

There are many more incidents where my life was spared supernaturally by God. However, again this is not part of this story. I have mentioned this so you can understand that what I am about to tell you is something I believe is unique as well as from God that you

The Beginning of the Beginning

should know or these unusual and strange things that have happened to me during my life would not have happened and God would have called someone else to write these books.

Perhaps, these events prepared me for more strange things to happen in my life. At this time, it has been nearly thirty years since I began having certain dreams that began in the night while I slept and after I awoke continued to come into my mind throughout the day in flashes. Long ago, I began to jot down notes to help me remember specific things I experienced or saw in my dreams as I realized that there were several separate story lines that I was dreaming about. I kept a note pad on my nightstand to write down key things about what I had just dreamed if I woke in the night. Sometimes, there was a series of dreams that must have been so important that they kept recurring night after night and during the day, the flashes in my mind even interrupted what I was doing. The only way I could stop this from happening was to write about what I had dreamed. This is the first book that is the result of those dreams. There are other books that I started writing years ago from many pieces of paper with parts of three stories and these have finally been written and I will begin to published all three as soon as I register my copyrights.

I was blessed to have a mother and a father who treated my siblings and me with love, care, and attention. They made me feel special just like our heavenly Father does to each of His children. In my early years, I never considered myself as really extra special to God. I certainly had not thought of myself as what I understood is a person who is a true prophet of God. Then I learned that a prophet is not just a person who reveals visions about the future. A prophet is one who has a message from God (like Samuel), and who is inspired by God to reveal things that others do not know or understand (like the Apostles Paul and John). These things might be about the future, the present, or the past; but all bring to light important truths from God.

I searched the Bible to see what happened to prophets of old. How were they called by God? Did any of them seek or ask God to give them visions or dreams or to even become a prophet? In Genesis 15: 1 it says “*the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision.*” I have read about Abram (who became Abraham) from chapter 11 to 15 and nowhere does it say that Abram specifically asked or prayed to the *LORD* to give him visions or even speak to him. The *LORD* just did it on His own. The same thing happened to Moses. The *LORD* sought him out using a ‘*burning bush*’ rather than Moses actually seeking the Almighty especially in the beginning. In 1st Samuel, we read that the *LORD* called out in the middle of the night several times to get Samuel’s attention.

What about other prophets of the Old and New Testaments? In chapter 6 of Isaiah, we read that Isaiah saw the throne of God in the third heaven and feared for his life. Read about Jeremiah. In chapter 1, we read that before he was formed in the womb, God had ordained him to be a prophet to the nations. Read about John’s visions that resulted in his writing the book of Revelation. Again, none of these men asked God to call them and make them a prophet. Our Heavenly Father just did it on His own.

After years of having dreams and visions I believe have been from God and especially since 1994 when my vision was of myself being in the presence of Jesus Christ; I felt compelled to put these things in writing. Am I a Prophet? I believe so; however, only time and God can tell if that is so. I am simply going to do what I believe Jesus Christ is telling me to do and that is write articles and these books. I will call these books, Fictional Biographies. Why? I am just not presumptuous enough to assume that all that I might write in these books is totally without any error and totally inspired by God. How much of my imagination might be mixed with insight that God has truly given me is simply beyond my knowing at this time. I

The Beginning of the Beginning

believe that ONLY the Holy Bible is the true Word of God. Every other writing including mine is just a work of fiction, imagination, and possibility, as it is of fact.

I believe you will find this Fictional Biography entertaining. It will certainly stretch your imagination. I would like to challenge you to find anything in what I have written in this Fictional Biography to be contrary to the Word of God. I believe what I have written can be classified as possibilities or even probabilities. You may think your ideas about what is being written here are more correct than mine. Do you even know how to establish what a Truth of God really is? Understand this fact. In order to prove what a truth of God is, you must have two or three witnesses or scriptures that are contextually verifiable, and applicable to the specific subject, individuals, place, and time you are considering and studying. Tradition and opinions do not count as facts nor can be used to prove what is a truth of God.

That said; it is almost time to begin this story inspired by my dreams.

Richard O'Decatur

Author, Apostle, Prophet, and Minister,
directly called by Jesus Christ

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Part One: Before the Beginning

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 1

My Dreams

As a Christian, I have read the Bible from cover to cover many times. I have now spent untold tens of thousands of hours actually studying what the Word of God tells about many subjects. As I have mentioned in the Prologue and I will repeat some of it here because some people do not read the Preface or Prologue of books, unusual things began to happen to me about five decades ago. First was a vision that told what would happen to me from the time that I had it to the end of my life. About three decades ago, I began to have some unbelievably realistic dreams. Some were about Elohim in heaven and involved things about man's creation that went beyond what I have read in the Bible. I began writing these things down and then put them together to form an account of the creation of the world and the beginning of the story of man. I have chosen to call this story a Fictional Biography because I am not claiming everything I write is 'the inspired Word of God'. Only the Holy Bible is the complete inspired Word of God. Still, this Fictional Biography has a story flow that also includes many truths I have gleaned from the Word of God. I believe that God has inspired me to present a story that not only fills in the gaps of what we read in the first 12 chapters of Genesis, but goes much farther back into eternity past.

I truly believe that Elohim [God] inspired the dreams I have had as well as my writings. Why do I claim this? As I wrote of the dreams I had, Bible scriptures would inundate my mind. It was as if God was talking to me through His written Word. This is not so unusual as many Christians have experienced the feeling that God was communicating with them through His Word.

Many times, I would awaken in the night after experiencing a very realistic dream of things mentioned in the first twelve chapters of Genesis and other passages in the Bible and then have Scriptures from the Bible running through my mind. There were times when I felt I was like the child Samuel when God began to call to him in the night. When this happened, I could not go back to sleep until I wrote down key words to jog my memory when I sat down to write the next day. While I want to emphasize that this work is not on the par as the Word of God, what we call the Holy Bible, it offers events and narratives that both compliment and supplement truths found throughout the actual Word of God. Again, please understand, this story is not scripture. Never consider any portions of this story on the same level as the Holy Scriptures in the Holy Bible. What scriptures I quote is the Word of God. While some parts may be inspired, it is as a whole the writings of a man and is not the same as the Word of God.

The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1: The Beginning of the Beginning; began long before the creation of man and the universe. It reveals what I believe is an important part mankind will play in the Creator's ultimate plan that will unfold into eternity far beyond our present day. Man's creation, while humble in its beginning, has an incredible destiny. I believe that this story reveals why man actually came into being. Other writers have never presented anything like this story. I believe that the beginnings of the creation of man actually shook the very throne of Elohim [God] and resulted in havoc so great that it reached beyond heaven and threatened to destroy the Earth in the newly created universe. This story cannot begin without first going back into eternity past when only Elohim existed and nothing else.

I originally thought of titling this Fictional Biography Athanasia, the Greek word for Immortality. It is a fact of existence

The Beginning of the Beginning

that every living thing strives with all its being to continue to live and not die. It seeks immortality on its own but always fails. From eternity past, only Elohim has immortality within Himself and only He can bestow life as well as immortality upon other beings.

14That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: 15Which in his times he shall show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; 16Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen. (1 Timothy 6:14-16 KJV)

This book is ultimately about man's destiny to eventually be born of Spirit as sons of God. Read in Romans chapter 8: 14 – 22 to see this is a truth from God's Word.

14For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. 15For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, "Abba, Father." 16The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, 17and if children, then heirs—heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together. 18For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. 19For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing of the sons of God. 20For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope; 21because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22For we know that the whole

creation groans and labors with birth pangs together until now. ²³Not only that, but we also who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body.

This book begins “***The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1:***”, and reveals that this Fictional Biography is just the beginning of the story of God and man. Man’s ultimate destiny to be born into the family of God as Romans 8: 14-22 clearly tells us that mankind when finally born of the Spirit of God after the resurrection if dead or transformed if alive at Jesus Christ’s return will be immortal. ***Part 1*** begins a story reaching back into eternity past before the setting we read of in Genesis chapter one in the Bible. This story begins when God [Elohim] starts to create all that would exist in the spiritual realm of heaven and much later in the physical realm of the universe. This book will end as it tells of the calling of Abraham, we find briefly described in chapter 12 of Genesis. Some have estimated the period of time from the creation of man to the calling of Abram while recorded in the first 12 chapters of Genesis in the Holy Bible involves at least two thousand years.

I am amazed by the myriad different ideas people have about angels. This story will clarify just what are angels and how they came into being. What roles do angels play in the story of God and man? Do people become angels when they die? I recently read a person promoting the concept that Satan or Lucifer was originally second in command and he was given the job to test man to see if he was worthy. This concept further (falsely) stated that Lucifer did not rebel and become Satan until after Yahweh changed His mind and decided on a different approach with Lucifer being replaced by Yeshua [Jesus] coming to earth. That is just a bunch of garbage. Read the Bible and my Fictional Biography and you will understand the truth.

The Beginning of the Beginning

As you may have noticed, as I write I often use the Hebrew name of our Heavenly Father and our Lord and Savior. I do this to get you to understand that was Their original names. A few years ago, I discovered that there simply was no letter 'J' in any language until about 400 years ago. This means that the name 'Jesus' could not have been the name our Lord had when He was born and lived a physical life for 33 ½ years on this earth. Consider further that He was born of a Jewish couple who only spoke Aramaic and Hebrew and they gave the Christ a Hebrew name as instructed by the angel Gabriel. That name was Yeshua. The name Jesus came from the development of the transliteration of Christ's name in the Greek text New Testament about 400 years ago. I will also be using the Hebrew names for our Heavenly Father, Yahweh; and in place of the name God, I will also use Elohim when I write about what was happening in Heaven long before man was created. I believe our Lord used the name Yeshua in eternity past before He became our Savior and was born in Bethlehem in Judea. As this story goes back into eternity past, these Hebrew names go back thousands of years while our English language is fairly modern.

Because so many questions concerning the creation event have been raised and have not been completely or satisfactorily answered in my mind and the minds of so many others, and because I believe that Jesus [Yeshua] has inspired and instructed me to do so, I will now add my writings to those of others before me. As you read this Fictional Biography, you will find a story line with narratives and events that attempt to explain possibilities of not only what has happened but also why things have happened. This is a Fictional Biography that I believe you will find interesting, intriguing, inspiring and above everything else worth reading. I hope you will read the entire Fictional Biography as you would other books. Please make a note of the page number of anything presented that you do

not understand or do not agree with. Then after reading the entire Fictional Biography, go back and further examine these using your Bible to prove otherwise if you can.

I realize that some ideas in this book might make you uncomfortable for you will read things you have never heard before. Again, let me encourage you to patiently read each page and take notes on things you do not agree with. Afterwards, I hope you search your Bible to ‘*prove all things*’. I hope you will ‘*hold fast that which is good*.’ If you find you have been wrong about something, it will be because the Word of God and the Holy Spirit has changed your mind, not what I wrote. One of the goals of my calling is to present ideas that will cause others to venture deeper into the great truths found in the Holy Bible.

An overwhelming amount of what I have portrayed in ***The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1:*** actually, come from dreams I have had over the years. Am I truly a Prophet of God? Only God knows for sure. I like to think of myself as just a guy with a vivid imagination and one who has had some unusual dreams that he has decided to share with others. What you read in this Fictional Biography that is not substantiated by the Word of God is simply opinion, speculation, or fiction at best. Perhaps, I should have called my book a ***Semi-Documentary Exposé*** rather than a ***Fictional Biography***. Naw, I like the sound of ‘Fictional Biography’ better and it is certainly easier to refer to a ‘Fictional Biography’ than a ‘semi-doc... etc. etc.’ title.

When you read things in this Fictional Biography that examine elements of theology and doctrine, I expect you might have a different opinion or belief concerning some specific subjects or parts of subjects. You might wholly agree with one thing and then pages later totally disagree with another thing I write. This should not surprise you. Every other writer that expresses their beliefs in stories they write based on Biblical subjects does the exact same thing. During my life, I have found that few people absolutely and totally

The Beginning of the Beginning

agree on every aspect of doctrine written or implied by their church with everyone else of the same church not to mention those of other church denominations. There are now thousands of Christian Church denominations in the world with more forming virtually every day.

The Bible instructs Christians to not just disagree with what is to them new ideas, but rather search the Word of God, the Holy Bible, and prove what is true (Acts 17: 10 -11). As I write about some things, I am going to provide a reference number that you can find in the back of the book when I do not wish to interrupt the story flow. This reference will provide scriptural information as to why I have written what I have written. However, you will find that most of the time, I will go ahead and quote some scriptures within the text of this book when I feel it directly adds information relevant to the story flow.

My greatest hope is this Fictional Biography will be instrumental in causing the continual and thorough search of the Holy Scriptures directly by each reader to find and hold onto the everlasting truths of Yahweh [our Heavenly Father] that He reveals to each of us individually. That in so doing we will maintain a strong faith in Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as Lord and Savior until we meet Him in the air face to face at His Second Coming.

Let me again direct your attention to certain names I will use in this story. I will be using the Hebrew personal names of Elohim [God]. Elohim the Father, Yahweh; and Elohim the Son, Yeshua [Jesus] for most of this book. These are the personal names of Elohim found in the original Hebrew language Word of God. When you see the 'Spirit' [capitalized] in the Bible, this is nearly always referring to the Holy Spirit. These Hebrew personal names make this story truer to the ancient writings. Gradually, I will stop putting common names most Christians are familiar with as the reader

becomes knowledgeable of the true Hebrew personal names so the flow of the story will be better.

Most Bible translators have been busy over the last two thousand plus years translating text from Koine Greek to English. I find it nearly impossible to conceive of the New Testament writers using Greek to write their letters and books. Every one of them were Hebrew. They talked and wrote using Aramaic or Hebrew not koine Greek. I have read some tales that depict a deceitful plot to destroy the true original Aramaic/ Hebrew text of New Testament Books by the Roman Catholic Church. They supposedly took the original books of the New Testament and transcribed the Aramaic and Hebrew text into the Latin Vulgate. Then they transcribed the Latin into koine Greek while they attempted to destroy all Aramaic and Hebrew text copies of New Testament books. However, the Catholic Church failed as numerous copies of the original Aramaic and Hebrew text New Testament Books survived. I do not know for sure if this happened but it sounds feasible to me. Do a search on the internet of this to see what you can find out concerning this involvement of the Catholic Church in establishing possible counterfeit koine Greek New Testament books.

As you might have guessed, I am using a pen name or pseudonym in publishing my books; *Richard of Decatur* or *Richard O'Decatur*. This name follows the New Testament naming of individuals using their first name and the name of the city they came from; such as Saul of Tarsus, Joseph of Arimathea, and Jesus of Nazareth. Using a pen name has been a common practice for countless years. For example, Samuel Clemens wrote his books such as *Tom Sawyer* and *Huckleberry Finn* using the pen name, Mark Twain.

My pen name is in fact my name using New Testament naming. My first name is Richard and I was born in Decatur. So, I am

The Beginning of the Beginning

Richard of Decatur or **Richard O'Decatur**. Here are the main reasons I am using this name. One, I like my privacy and have little interest in gaining a following or starting another new church organization. Still, I would like to gain a following reading my books and having some make contributions so I can give copies to others without charge. Two, I desire anonymity because I want others to read and consider what I write on its own merit. Few people from my past really know me. Today, I am considerably different in many ways than I was twenty plus years ago. Some of my beliefs have changed dramatically as I have studied further into the Bible on a host of subjects. I have used the Bible and hardly any writings of other people in determining what to believe. For over two decades, I have been removed from institutional thinking that is prominent in all religious organizations.

I want to make this clear. My mention of dreams and visions have taken place as I have described them. My mention of a vision of actually being in the presence of Jesus [Yeshua] Christ and being made His Apostle, Prophet, and Minister directly from Him actually happened as I have described. My choosing to use a pen name involves my privacy and does not change what guided my writing this book nor my calling.

I have put this chapter in this Fictional Biography because I am part of this story, as I have interjected comments as the story unfolds to explain what may be otherwise unclear. I am the one who has had the dreams and visions as well as hearing the words of scripture and finally I am putting all these things together into this book.

Richard O'Decatur

Author, Apostle, Prophet, and Minister directly called by Yeshua [Jesus] Christ

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 2

The Beginning of the Beginning?

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with Elohim, and the Word was Elohim. He was in the beginning with Elohim. All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. (John 1:1-3 Hebraic Roots Bible [HRB])

Before we can really begin the story of the new Immortals, the reader needs to consider the enormous difficulty such an undertaking involves. How can one describe a time in eternity as ‘*In the beginning?*’ How does one consider or measure things of eternity when even that span can hardly be imagined and cannot be measured by the greatest of human minds? Some might say that no matter how hard we try; it is simply impossible to describe that which cannot be described in any mortal language past or present.

However, let us consider the following facts. The human race is truly the infant offspring¹ of the all-powerful Elohim who has eternally existed in a spiritual realm the Holy Scriptures call the Third Heaven. We know by experience that children learn to think, reason, speak, and write after being taught by their parents and other teachers. As the offspring of Elohim, man can be taught to think, reason, speak, and write of heavenly things for His Father teaches him by the Holy Spirit and His Word we call the Holy Bible. Consider, mankind’s existence to date has been in a temporary and mortal physical realm we call the universe and his home is a planet called Earth. However, man’s ultimate destiny makes him at this time in his existence very much like that of a fetus that has yet to be born into the spiritual realm of Yahweh [his Heavenly Father]. While the body and mind of man grows to a physical maturity, it has

yet to be actually born into a Spirit composition like that of Yahweh, his Father. Elohim and His realm have only been seen in heavenly visions as recorded in the Holy Scriptures.

Elohim is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:24 HRB)

In order to present Elohim, and what He has done, we must attempt to describe spiritual things past, present, and future. We cannot begin to do so without consulting the Holy Scriptures both literally and by inference. Let us never forget that anything that is not a direct quote in this or any other document is simply based on a human beings' perspective and opinion and cannot be considered as completely factual no matter how convincing that speculation may appear. Never forget that this writer and other mortals of this Earth are fallible. Yet, this story is written from the perspective of a child of Elohim considering what our Heavenly Father, Yahweh has tried to tell him from His divine Word, and by the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. Now, let us consider that there is a wealth of possibilities in imagining what may have happened as Elohim created the heavens and the Earth, for He has revealed many things about Himself and what took place in the past as we contemplate those things He has created.

The heavens declare the glory of Elohim [God]; And the firmament shows His handiwork. Day unto day utters speech, And night unto night reveals knowledge. (Psalms 19:1 - 2 HRB)

Because what may be known of Elohim [God] is manifest in them, for Elohim has shown it to them. For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead. (Romans 1:19 - 20 HRB)

The Beginning of the Beginning

The Scriptures further tell us that He has revealed many deep spiritual things to those whom He has chosen to give His Holy Spirit, along with heavenly knowledge to those who believe in Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as Savior and humbly serve and obey our Lord.

But as it is written: "Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered into the heart of man the things which Elohim [God] has prepared for those who love Him." But Elohim has revealed them to us through His Spirit. For the Spirit searches all things, yes, the deep things of Elohim. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from Elohim, that we might know the things that have been freely given to us by Elohim. These things we also speak, not in words which man's wisdom teaches but which the Holy Spirit teaches, comparing spiritual things with spiritual. (1 Corinthians 2:9-13 HRB)

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 3

The Godhead

When we say the heavenly realm of Elohim [God] is beyond measurement that simply means it has no bounds whether of time, space, or substance that mankind since his creation has learned to use as a reference. Eternal simply means no beginning and no end. Mankind has come to learn that when it comes to life and things on this Earth, everything has limits as well as a beginning and an end. Perhaps we can better understand the Spiritual realm in which Elohim exists if we consider that it simply and totally has no limits at all like that of the physical world.

I started to shake as I began to write about the next verse I will quote. You see, I have had the same kind of experience as the Prophet Isaiah that he wrote about in chapter 6 verse 5

“Woe is me, for I am undone! Because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips; for my eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts.”

In Scripture, we find a host of references that relate to Elohim [God] primarily mentioning two great Elohim Deities² eternally existing together, one in absolute accord, known throughout the Old Testament as ‘Elohim’, a uni-plural word in the Hebrew language meaning more than one. [I will discuss this point just a bit later.] Yet, Elohim is one of a kind in regard to His family. The first Elohim Deity’s name recorded in Hebrew is Yahweh. He is sometimes called the ‘*Ancient of Days*’ or ‘*Almighty Yahweh*’ [God]. To the spirit beings that inhabited the realm of Elohim, He is known as Yahweh or Yah for short. The second Elohim Deity’s name is Yeshua in Hebrew and translated ‘*Yah is our salvation*’. In the Hebrew scriptures His name is

sometimes shortened to Y'shua. This second Elohim became the Son of God, most have been taught from English translations of the Holy Bible that used the transliteration from koine Greek text New Testament books to give His name as Jesus. These names and other shared names were revealed to the ancient nation of Israel and are recorded in the original Hebrew language in the books called the Old Testament. There are some chapters in the Book of Daniel that were originally written in Aramaic as well.

There is a third Deity of the Godhead called the Holy Spirit. Unlike the Father and the Son, the Holy Spirit does not have the form of a person and can encompass part or all of the universe and can place a part of its being in each person who truly accepts Jesus [Yeshua] Christ as their Savior and Lord. This becomes a conduit in which the Father and the Son can inspire, protect, and guide each Christian toward developing Godly character leading to salvation.

At this point, some readers may be shouting or at least thinking, "Wait a minute. What is this about three separate Elohim [God] Deities? After all, most Christians have only heard that there is only One God." Then there are others who totally believe in the Trinity composed of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. There have been untold volumes written trying to explain the concept of God [Elohim] who is supposed to be One yet is referred to as the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Some have been told this is a 'divine mystery' beyond human comprehension. Some theologians even present the idea that Elohim is like a person with multiple personalities. I refuse to get dragged into such endless confusing theories. Let the Word of Elohim tell us the simple truth.

Please, stop and consider this fact. There is often no exact word for word translation from Hebrew, Aramaic, or Greek to English. Scholars try to find a meaningful word within an extensive and wordy definition. If they are competent, they will pick one word

The Beginning of the Beginning

after looking at the word's usage in other scriptures and how it is placed within the context of words before and after it in the particular verse or passage. However, history has proven especially within the realm of theology, scholars allow their beliefs or prejudices to sometimes cause them to make their selection rather than using the true context.

With that said, I would like for you to examine Deuteronomy 6:4. I will quote this verse from the KJV Bible and then the Hebraic Roots Bible along with its explanation.

4HearH8085, O IsraelH3478: The LORDH3068 our ElohimH430 is oneH259 LORDH3068 (KJV).

4 Hear, O Israel, Yahweh our Elohim is Yahweh echad.3 (HRB)

3. This verse called “The Great Shema” because “*Hear O Israel*” means to listen or be attentive to. The Hebrew word “*echad*” **is a unity word such as family**, see Gen 2:24, and means “*Yahweh united*”. If the intention of the verse was to show there was only one YHWH [Yahweh], the Hebrew word used would have been “*yachid*”, see Gen 22:12. It would also make no sense to state there is only Yahweh, when scripture undeniably states there are cherubs and Seraphs and elders around His throne amongst other beings, Rev 4:4, Is 6:1-3. (HRB)

This is one of the primary scriptures that talks about Elohim [God] being One. Seeing this verse translated directly from the Hebrew we see the word *echad* and its meaning from the HRB helps us to understand that there are three Deities in the Godhead; the Father, Yahweh; the Son, Yeshua [Jesus]; and the Holy Spirit. This is made much clearer than simply examining the original Hebrew

text (superscript and colored blue) follows the translated words. We can examine each word and try to consider what this verse means. First, the word *LORD* is translated from the Hebrew word *YHWH* or *Yahweh* (H3068) and is defined in Strong's Dictionary as: From H1961; (the) *self Existent* or eternal; *Jehovah*, Jewish national name of Elohim:—*Jehovah*, the Lord. Compare H3050, H3069. Please note that Strong's Dictionary uses the false translations of YHWH to Yeshua instead of the true translation to Yahweh. I hope this helps you to understand this subject more clearly as you see the true translations of the Hebrew personal names for each Elohim Deity.

The word *Elohim* is the Hebrew word for God (H430) and is defined as: Plural of H433; *Elohim* in the ordinary sense; but specifically used (**in the plural** thus, especially with the article) **of the supreme Elohim**; occasionally applied by way of deference to *magistrates*; and sometimes as a superlative:—angels, X exceeding, Elohim (Elohims) (-dess, -ly), X (very) great, judges, X mighty. This is the word used for God in Genesis chapter one where it says:

²⁶And *God*^{H430} said^{H559}, Let us make^{H6213} man^{H120} in our image^{H6754}, after our likeness^{H1823}:

Now let us see what the definition for the word *one* translated from the Hebrew word *echad* (H259) means. Its definition reads: A numeral from H258; **properly united**, that is, *one*; or (as an ordinal) **first**:—a, **alike**, alone, **altogether**, and, any (-thing), apiece, a certain [dai-] ly, each (one), + eleven, every, few, first, + highway, a man, once, one, only, other, some, **together**. In this case we need to know what H258 means as our word (*one* or *echad* (H259)) comes from this word. H258 is the Hebrew word *achad* defined as: Perhaps a primitive root; **to unify**, **that is, (figuratively) collect** (one's thoughts):—**go one way** or other.

The Beginning of the Beginning

It looks like most scholars stopped reading after ‘A numeral’ and think it can only mean the number one (1), and that is why they say, there is only One Being or One Deity when we refer to Elohim. But, read the entire definition and the definition that follows that I have copied in the preceding paragraphs. I have highlighted several words within this definition that certainly mean ‘more than one’ when it comes to how many Deities are being addressed in the verse. While this word can even be a few, it has these characteristics that are in common: **first, properly united, alike, altogether, together, to unify, go one way**. We read the same kind of word in the following verse.

1And when^{G1722-G3588} the day^{G2250} of Pentecost^{G4005} was fully^{G4845} come^{G4845}, they were all^{G537} with one^{G3674} accord^{G3661} in one^{G3588-G848} place. (Acts 2:1 KJV)

The word accord comes from the Greek word homthumadon (^{G3661}) is defined as: Adverb from a compound of the base of ^{G3674} and ^{G2372}; unanimously:—**with one accord (mind)**. This describes a oneness that transcends the number of beings or entities that is being addressed. In Deuteronomy 6: 4, we read that this one mind that can exist in three Deities and in Acts 2: 1 this tells us this is a mere shadow of what we find in our Elohim [God]. The Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit all three are Elohim, existing together in absolute and perfect unity. To address *One* is the same as addressing the others. Their many names reflect who and what They are and They share all names, for while They exist as three Deities, They are absolutely and totally one in purpose and perfect harmony as no other three beings could possibly be. The very name of Elohim is a family name and all beings are of the one family of Elohim and that makes them One. This oneness is a mystery that

over the ages has perplexed and confused most Biblical scholars and theologians even to the present time.

In Isaiah 9:6, we find a prophetic reference that no one can dispute is telling about the birth of Jesus [Yeshua] Christ. Notice that Jesus [Yeshua], the Son, shares some of the exact same names as the Heavenly Father, Yahweh. That may be one of the reasons theologians have such a problem wrapping their minds around the Oneness of Elohim.

6For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God [Elohim], The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. (Isaiah 9:6 KJV)]

All have existed for eternity and are equal in every respect. However, between Yahweh and Yeshua has been a bond like father and son even from the beginning in eternity past. I cannot emphasize enough that no words can adequately describe Elohim and any attempt can only feebly begin what cannot be finished. Such words as Omnipotent, Omnipresent, Invincible, and Supreme are extreme understatements at best. Two words can give us a glimpse of Their infinite greatness: Creators and Life. There is also another word that describes Them perhaps as no other single word can, Love. They are love and for all eternity, They have expressed this love as creators. They create all things and They alone are capable of creating life in other beings to enjoy all They have and to share Their greatness with them. They are not only the very source of life in any form but through Them is the only infinite and eternal power to sustain or destroy the life They alone chose to give.

Through existence called eternity past, these great Elohim beings have continually grown in power and understanding further developing Their great wisdom. They learned greater faith in each other by giving and receiving trust. They learned to limit the power

The Beginning of the Beginning

Their very beings emit as no other creature conceived by Them could exist in Their presence as Their power and glory fully revealed would instantly vaporize any other creature into total non-existence. While They could do anything and everything They imagined without any need of help by any other creature, They found that working with and even standing back and watching other creatures do things gave Them great happiness and joy.

The Holy Spirit

While most Christians believe that a third heavenly Elohim Being or Deity³ also exists by the name of the Holy Spirit (some translations such as the KJV use the term Holy Ghost); there are some groups of Christians that do not believe that the Holy Spirit is a separate member of the Godhead. They say the Old Testament clearly refers to the Holy Spirit as a power that worked in the creation and in fulfilling Yahweh's will on Earth. When asked to point out scriptures that support the belief that the Holy Spirit is a third member of the Godhead, many will respond by turning to the book of John, chapters 14 and 15 as proof that the Holy Spirit is not only a living active force but is also a separate Being or Deity as the pronoun *he* is used. Yeshua [Jesus] stated that this personal aid and empowering force would fill repentant mortals with the eternal spirit power of Elohim to be reborn as children⁴ in the family of Elohim when Yeshua [Jesus] Christ returns to Earth at the end of time. Most Christians simply do not believe that there has to be any proof as it is a matter of faith to believe in the existence of the Godhead as a trinity. I cannot agree with that idea. How can faith exist apart from scripture? The Bible states in 6 separate verses that each truth of Elohim must be established by two or three witnesses⁵ such as separate verses in the Bible.

So, one's faith needs to be scripturally based not just trusting in 'divine mysteries'. Here are two scriptures that provide a witness to the truth as they tear down arguments against the concept that the Holy Spirit is a separate entity as Yeshua [Jesus] is from Elohim the Father, Yahweh.

Ephesians 4:30 NKJV

30And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of Elohim, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption.

Acts 5:3 - 4 NKJV

3But Peter said, "Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and keep back part of the price of the land for yourself? 4While it remained, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not in your own control? Why have you conceived this thing in your heart? You have not lied to men but to Elohim."

How would it be possible to 'grieve' an electric power or puff of wind? If the Holy Spirit is only a power from Elohim, it would be impossible to 'grieve' it. Now consider the possibility of trying to '*lie to the Holy Spirit*'. Can a person 'lie' to a power or the wind? No, that is impossible. So, the existence of the Holy Spirit seems to be well established by these two witness scriptures. Consider further that in Acts 5: 4 it says that the Holy Spirit is Elohim because it says the Holy Spirit was lied to in verse 3.

This should be enough to make any Christian wonder if they have been misled concerning this topic. In any case, this is a matter each person must decide for themselves using the Bible for facts and the Holy Spirit for discernment.

The Beginning of the Beginning

You can search the Holy Scriptures from cover to cover but you will not find a physical description of the Holy Spirit. This Deity can assume any shape and can place a part of its being within the soul of all who accept Yeshua [Jesus] as their personal Savior and commit to living a righteous life as described in the New Testament. It was the Holy Spirit who is first mentioned in Genesis 1: 2.

*1In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. 2The earth became without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And **the Spirit of God** was hovering over the face of the waters.*

In this story, the Holy Spirit is often in the background of events that take place. While He is not prominently presented or acknowledged as being present that does not mean He is not really there in actuality.

.....

What Yahweh Looks Like

What is Yahweh really like in shape, size, color, and other features? We do not have to guess for His description can be found in the Word of Elohim [God] and this passage also refers to the second Deity who would much later be born of Mary whose Hebrew name is Yeshua and whose Greek name is Jesus.

Daniel 7:9 - 14 (NKJV)

*9 “I watched till thrones were put in place,
And **the Ancient of Days** [Yahweh, or God the Father] was seated;
His garment was white as snow,
And **the hair of His head was like pure wool.***

*His throne was a fiery flame,
Its wheels a burning fire;*

*10 A fiery stream issued
And came forth from before Him.
A thousand thousands ministered to Him;
Ten thousand times ten thousand stood before Him.
The court was seated,
And the books were opened.*

*11 “I watched then because of the sound of the pompous words
which the horn was speaking; I watched till the beast was slain,
and its body destroyed and given to the burning flame.*

*12 As for the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken
away, yet their lives were prolonged for a season and a time.*

*13 “I was watching in the night visions,
And behold, One like **the Son of Man [Yeshua or Jesus]**,
Coming with the clouds of heaven!
He came to **the Ancient of Days**,
And they brought Him near before Him.*

*14 Then to Him was given dominion and glory and a kingdom,
That all peoples, nations, and languages should serve Him.
His dominion is an everlasting dominion,
Which shall not pass away,
And His kingdom the one
Which shall not be destroyed.*

In the latter portion we find the Second Deity who is called **the Son of Man**. This name is used extensively in the New Testament

The Beginning of the Beginning

by Yeshua or Jesus referring to Himself. As mentioned before His Hebrew name is Yeshua and His Greek name is Jesus. We get a description of Him in the following passage. Please note the similarity of Yeshua in the following passage with that of Yahweh in the previous passage.

Revelation 1:12 - 20 (NKJV)

12 Then I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned I saw seven golden lampstands,

*13 and in the midst of the seven lampstands One like **the Son of Man [Jesus or Yeshua]**, clothed with a garment down to the feet and girded about the chest with a golden band.*

14 His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and His eyes like a flame of fire;

15 His feet were like fine brass, as if refined in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters;

16 He had in His right hand seven stars, out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His countenance was like the sun shining in its strength.

*17 And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. But He laid His right hand on me, saying to me, **“Do not be afraid; I am the First and the Last.***

*18 **I am He who lives, and was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore. Amen. And I have the keys of Hades and of Death.***

*19 **Write the things which you have seen, and the things which are, and the things which will take place after this.***

*20 **The mystery of the seven stars which you saw in My right hand, and the seven golden lampstands: The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands which you saw are the seven churches.***

But, let us conjecture a bit further. Please consider that as the human race is the prodigy of the first man made in Elohim's image and after His likeness, we can conclude that Yah and Yeshua actually look very much like the average human being of today. We have seen in ancient carvings and paintings that humans of the past are not much different from those of today. However, since Elohim is a spirit, we can possibly consider that the actual 'dimensions' of the Father and the Son could be infinitely greater or smaller when transcending from the spiritual to the physical realm. We can generally imagine as They were creating mankind that They would have made them about the same size They normally appear. Therefore, if you were to stand before these Elohim Deities you would probably see that They appear to be about five and a half to six feet tall and have bodies exactly like that which humans have (ten toes and fingers, two arms and legs, two eyes, one head, a nose, a mouth, hair on head and face, etc.). From every reference concerning Elohim, both the Father and Son appear masculine. There is no scripture that denotes any characteristic, appearance, or behavior of Elohim as feminine. The same masculine appearance also applies to angels.

There is no reason to assume that physically, human beings would appear as small as insects before a towering giant on judgment day as one religious leader described years ago. Although if we were to compare mankind's mental and spiritual abilities and nature, we figuratively see that mankind would very much resemble tiny ants to a being greater than the largest dinosaur we can imagine.

Adam was created to look like Elohim. The word 'Adam' comes from 'red clay'. Why did Elohim use red clay when there are many other shades from white or light beige to dark brown with red being in the upper middle spectrum between the two? I believe that this tells us that the color of Yahweh's and Yeshua's skin must be

The Beginning of the Beginning

like that of red clay. It is probable that we would see in the two Elohim Deities that we have descriptions of (Yahweh and Yeshua) many features from all races found on Earth today. Racial characteristics including skin color involves only 2 or 3 strands of the 92 strands of a human's DNA and these are only 'skin deep'. Based on Biblical text, I believe that Elohim's color and facial features could very well be like that of a full-blooded Native American Indian.

What does it really mean when the Bible says that Elohim exists and dwells in light?

He who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone has immortality, dwelling in unapproachable light, (1 Timothy 6:15 – 16 NKJV).

This scripture makes it clear that Elohim alone at this time has immortality, athanasia in Hebrew, and only He can give immortality to another. Continuing on, this scripture goes further in stating that He dwells '*in unapproachable light*'. What this scripture is telling us is simply that Elohim exists outside the bounds or limits of time. This actually means that He can appear at any time in eternity past, present, as well as eternity future. This explains how He is able to know what will take place in the future. He can also change the future by what He may do in the past as well as the present. He exists outside the physical limits of our universe as well. This also means He is as He decides to be. He can manifest Himself large enough to hold the entire physical universe in the palm of one hand or manifest Himself so small He could stand beside the smallest particle of matter and it would be as large as the Earth is to one of us. When the physical realm was created, Elohim was able to move within its entirety not only in the physical planes but also in time from beginning to end.

I have thus far tried to present many facts about the existence of Elohim as best as my limited mind power can with a set of

inadequate words. While this is part of this story, the real action part of this story begins to take place as I begin to describe the heavenly realm of Elohim and the inhabitants within it and then expand into possible dialogues between these Spirit beings. In the following chapters I am going to use many Bible scriptures as the foundation and building blocks as I narrate what may have taken place a long... long... long time ago.

Chapter 4

The Realm of Elohim

While Elohim has existed for eternity, He created everything else at some specific point (for lack of a better term). While time has no measure, events that have occurred during eternity provide a reference point when needed. When did something take place? Before or after some event. Some point near the beginning of these other things, we would find in the Spirit realm substances or materials that were of a spiritual nature as physical matter did not exist until Elohim later spoke it into existence. While there were no limits to Elohim, every creature Elohim brought into being had limitations.

If we had been there in the beginning, we would have found that within the spirit realm spiritual structures began to be formed that resemble what humans have seen on Earth. We would see landscapes, buildings, streets, parks; flowering, decorative, and fruit bearing plants; and even furniture, sculptures, paintings, and etc. In fact, basically everything that now exists in the physical plane was actually patterned after these things.

One major thing that differs from Earth is things are not held on a flat or round surface like the force of gravity causes on the planets in our universe. This means that buildings and landscapes might curve up or down or be completely suspended in the air not touching anything else for support. [For a visual example of this concept, one can recall scenes in the movie “Avatar” of the floating mountains on the planet Pandora.]

We would see that some structures were so vast in size and grandeur that they would defy description in any mortal language. Think of all the football stadiums in the NFL and they all would easily fit together inside of these halls along with their parking areas and still have room for several times that amount. As we look about, we would find dining halls (yes, immortal spirits such as angels and even Elohim, ate food even though they did not have to have food to sustain life as mortals require), meeting rooms, assembly rooms, a temple, and dwelling places so lavish that even the grandest of palaces that have existed on Earth during any period would look like rundown cardboard shanties by comparison. How utterly amazing would be our wonder as we gazed on some structures sparkling like translucent crystal and on others that appeared to be made of purest gold, silver, and precious stones mortals will later see on Earth **6**.

While no spirit being requires nourishment or rest, the scriptures reveal that all were capable of enjoying virtually all the five senses, as human beings now know them. Many of the attributes of Elohim were given to angels. We find that not only angels visited the Earth, but also Yeshua and Yahweh actually visited the Earth during Adam's life and we also find He visited Abraham and actually sat down and ate and drank with him. We need to consider that the form in which They appeared was certainly not in their full power as no human or any other being could see Them and live. Even in the encounter Moses had with Yahweh, Moses was only able to see the backside of Yahweh as He passed going away from Moses.

Then the Lord (Yahweh) appeared to him by the terebinth trees of Mamre, as he was sitting in the tent door in the heat of the day. So, he lifted his eyes and looked, and behold, three men were standing by him; and when he saw them, he ran from the tent door to meet them, and bowed himself to the ground, and said, "My Lord, if I have now found favor in Your sight, do not

The Beginning of the Beginning

pass on by Your servant. Please let a little water be brought, and wash your feet, and rest yourselves under the tree. And I will bring a morsel of bread, that you may refresh your hearts. After that you may pass by, inasmuch as you have come to your servant.” They said, “Do as you have said.” So, Abraham hurried into the tent to Sarah and said, “Quickly, make ready three measures of fine meal; knead it and make cakes.” And Abraham ran to the herd, took a tender and good calf, gave it to a young man, and he hastened to prepare it. So, he took butter and milk and the calf which he had prepared, and set it before them; and he stood by them under the tree as they ate. (Genesis 18: 1 - 8 NKJV)

While the children of Israel journeyed to the Promise Land, Moses and a number of others went up and saw the ‘*Elohim of Israel*.’ The last part of this passage says, “*They saw Elohim, and they ate and drank*.” There is no mention that these men carried food and drink with them so it appears that Elohim provided it for them. It would seem odd that after Moses and the nobles of the children of Israel saw Elohim and a meal was placed before them, that they would eat and drink while Elohim just stood there and watched them. I think He would join in and enjoy the meal with them.

⁹Then Moses went up, also Aaron, Nadab, and Abihu, and seventy of the elders of Israel, ¹⁰and they saw the Elohim of Israel. And there was under His feet as it were a paved work of sapphire stone, and it was like the very heavens in its clarity. ¹¹But on the nobles of the children of Israel He did not lay His hand. So they saw Elohim, and they ate and drank. (Exodus 24:9 – 11)

Spirit beings could taste, smell, and feel the textures of food and materials in the spirit realm as well as later in the physical realm. There were tasks for all to do individually and as part of teams and while none ever needed rest in all probability there was ‘time’ for them to relax, reflect, and meditate when not actively engaged in work. It is also very probable that they enjoyed some kind of recreational activities and possibly some kinds of sports. Virtually everything later on that became part of the physical world had a preexistent form in the spiritual world.

Spirit beings moved upon, about, and through objects in this spirit world. It is probable that unlike Elohim, most other spirit beings needed openings that looked like windows to see through and doors to provide a way to enter and exit structures. Later in the physical realm of the universe these other spirit beings would discover that they could pass through what appeared as solid matter but this was not so in the spirit realm. They could see the indescribable beauty of the heavenly realm and hear the angelic choirs sing along with an orchestra playing music from many instruments that would later be fashioned on Earth.

Some senses had not been experienced by any of them such as the feeling of pain, sickness, suffering, fear, or sadness. Some senses and feelings would never be felt by angelic beings such as those felt by humans regarding sexual drives simply because these things were not part of their mind and body created by Elohim. While all these spirit beings have emotions, as we know them, the only ones they had experienced were those of a positive nature such as love, joy, happiness, and peace. That is, until a fateful event took place.

.....

*The Beginning of the Beginning***The Throne of Elohim**

While most places are open at all times for all the spirit beings, there are some places in the heavenly realm of Elohim that only certain beings are allowed to enter. There is the Holy of Holies that only Yahweh, Yeshua, and the Holy Spirit can enter and no other creature in existence. There are various separate workshops. Some allow access by only the twenty-four elders in addition to Elohim. Still, other workshops are open for some but not all of the angels. Finally, there were some other workshops that were open to all.

Then there is the massive Throne Room that is often used as a meeting place where all the heavenly beings could assemble at one time. Within it, there is a raised platform that holds the two thrones of Elohim; Yeshua sits at the right hand of Yahweh. There is another powerful Elohim being, the Holy Spirit, that does not take shape but is capable of entering and flowing through both of the Elohim Deities that sit on thrones. While it can be felt, it usually cannot be seen as it invisibly surrounds the Thrones of Elohim when it is not doing the will of those who sit on the thrones. On each side of the two thrones, there is a large angelic being standing over twenty feet tall with six wings known as Cherubim. Two of the wings that are over twenty feet in length rise high above the thrones and the tips touch those of the other Cherubim on the other side forming a covering. Large purple and gold colored curtains alternately hang behind the two thrones. On the four corners of the platform surrounding the thrones are pedestals where four great and awesome creatures with enormous folded wings stand as if on guard.

Spanning 180 degrees in front of the raised platform there is a flat open area that shimmers like glass where upon those summoned stood before the thrones of Elohim. Just beyond this, a table arcs about the two thrones with twenty-four thrones where the Elders sit facing the two thrones of Elohim. The Elders are angelic beings and

were created first by Elohim before all the other angels. They serve in a specific way like a group of accountants today keeping track of resources and recording all that takes place in the Heavenly Realm of Elohim. Projecting beyond the table are tiers of seating that extends in an arc outward and upward into a distance that cannot be measured. On a regular basis, the entire host of heaven is gathered together in the Throne Room of Elohim⁷.

Existing in the heavenly realm are numerous spirit beings that have been created by Elohim. I have already introduced the twenty-four spirit beings called Elders. These beings are responsible for administering and coordinating what is taking place in Elohim's realm as well as taking part in further developing detailed plans to assist in the creation process. While Elohim needs no help to accomplish anything They decide to do, They have created most of the beings with limited ability to create and make things and They allow them to participate and help Them as They develop their creations.

There are large and small beings or creatures having been made in many different shapes. Some have shapes mankind would recognize as reptiles covered with scales, others four and two legged animals covered with fur, and still others with feathers that again were used as a pattern for many physical creations that were to come. Some are a mix of different types of creatures combined into one.

Most spirit beings called angels appear in forms similar to Elohim. Few angels actually have wings like the cherubim and seraphim. Some are archangels and still just a few others are Great Archangels who were very powerful and supreme leaders of great bands of angelic beings. All were loyal and faithful servants of Elohim until something unthinkable happened.

Chapter 5

Creation of The Great Archangels

It was the creation of the last of the Great Archangels that indelibly shaped the future of events that shook the very heavens. While Elohim had created thousands of angels and archangels **8**, the first of the ‘Great’ archangels was Gabriel. They discovered his personality was very much like that of Yah. When They created the second great archangel, Michael, they found his personality seemed to mirror that of Yeshua. These Great Archangels were much greater in power and majesty than any angelic beings previously created. Their bearing and manner expressed the nature of Elohim as no other angelic beings could. Ten thousand archangels had been created along with millions of other lesser angels but none were like Gabriel or Michael.

While each Elohim Deity could virtually be everywhere at every instance, they had chosen to withhold Their omnipresence as a sign of faith and trust in Their created ones. This allowed Their creation free will to choose to do what was right and their loyalty and obedience was in the beginning absolute. The angels were virtually the eyes and ears of Elohim of all that took place in the heavenly realm. What might seem like the blink of an eye to mortals, would find thousands of angels delivering reports to Elohim on various projects taking place in heaven.

The last created angelic being was a great archangel named Lucifer, which means “the morning star.” In his beginning, he was the sum total of all other creative efforts combined that Elohim had made. He was magnificent in appearance and his countenance actually shown slightly brighter than either of the other two Great

Archangels but he and all other beings countenance was still barely visible in comparison to the Elohim Deities. Lucifer was given more knowledge and power than any other angel had been given at the very moment of his creation⁹. Some wondered if in this one being there was even as much power as all the other angels combined and possibly near that of Elohim. Yah and Yeshua found Lucifer exhibited a personality different from any other angelic being they had ever created. There was something about him that They could not put in words, just a feeling they had never experienced before, and one that They quickly put out of Their minds. Later, They were to look back at those feelings and recognize they were feelings of foreboding.

Yah and Yeshua could find no fault in anything he did or said. Initially, they even listened in on his very thoughts and found nothing amiss. As They gave him tasks to perform, he consistently completed them beyond Their expectations. He constantly requested more and more things to do. His desire to know all and be involved in everything was virtually insatiable. Sometimes the three Great Archangels were given similar tasks and they developed a friendly competition to see which one could do the best. A pattern developed and more often than not, Lucifer completed his first and best while Michael and Gabriel were close seconds. When Lucifer came in second to either of the other two Great Archangels, it seemed like he sulked and was very unhappy. This was very surprising to Elohim, as no other angel had ever acted that way. After such events, he would work even harder striving to not be outdone by the other two and when he again placed first, he would raise his arm and pump his fist and exclaim “Yes!” Yeshua wondered about this behavior while Yah pondered where this attitude might possibly go. Without discussing it between Themselves both had the same thought, *“Is there anything wrong with striving to be the best?”*

The Beginning of the Beginning

A great number of the angelic band were assigned to each of the three Great Archangels. These and others rotated assignments under Lucifer, Michael, and Gabriel's direction. As eternity passed, a core of angels desired to spend more time with one great archangel, while the rest of the angelic band continued rotating.

There were thousands of other smaller teams led by archangels that looked after routine refinements of structures and landscapes throughout the heavenly realm. New buildings were made and new parks developed. Few things remained the same beyond the memory of even the newest created angel. Periodically a number of these angels were rotated into the teams of the three archangels while their smaller teams received those who rotated out.

Elohim began to notice that most angels changed as they performed various tasks. Those performing only one type of task endlessly repetitive remained at a constant level and sometimes actually became less able to do that one task as others who were new at doing that same task. Those who performed a variety of tasks and rotated tasks regularly or had new tasks to learn were not only able to grow in ability but also maintained excellent proficiency in all the tasks they had ever performed. Elohim pondered this as eons of eternity passed. Their first concern was for each angel to be happy and content with whatever they were doing. This appeared to be the case for both those who stayed at the same task and those who rotated tasks. Each individual angel was unique. Some liked change, some did not really like it, and some were quite satisfied either way.

While Michael and Gabriel had separate teams to complete missions or projects, their manner of leadership was basically the same. Both rarely gave a direct order. They took time to explain what was to be done with all the other angels in their respective

group and it seemed that all the subordinate angels really worked with them rather than for them. Without even realizing it, this form of organization and management was exactly how Elohim had ruled throughout eternity. At times, the angelic responsibilities were divided so that some took care of overall coordination and others attended to details and even these tasks were rotated so all could enjoy doing something different from project to project. Any and all could directly gain Michael or Gabriel's attention without going through a 'chain of command' having to go up a hierarchy one level at a time in any matter. Often these two Great Archangels would incorporate suggestions by other angels even at the lowest level to improve on their ideas. While planning and organizing took a little more time when it came to performing the actual tasks to accomplish their mission, this was done in a very harmonious and timely manner. Every angel thoroughly enjoyed their work and all were rewarded as equals. Even Michael and Gabriel's share were the same as the lowest level angel on their team. Remarkably, many of the lower angels were actually developing higher abilities that had initially only been given to archangels. They discovered that the work of doing a task was often just as important as what was finally completed.

Unlike the way Michael and Gabriel ran their teams, there was a major difference in the way Lucifer managed those angels who were assigned to his team. While Michael and Gabriel considered the other angels under them as assisting and working with them rather than for them, Lucifer let his team know who the boss was. His methods were completely new and had never been tried in heaven by Elohim or any other angelic beings. When he gave orders, he virtually demanded they be completed without any questions or variance. He hardly ever asked for help in planning things and handled a great deal of the scheduling as well. It was remarkable that he seemed to think of everything. In modern terms, he 'micro'

The Beginning of the Beginning

managed tasks of his subordinates at times even down to the lowest levels.

Every angel worked hard at accomplishing their tasks and being ready for new tasks. Some lower angels felt that the primary job of middle managers was to 'look' busy and make up extra things for lower levels to do to keep them busy. Trying to get answers seemed to grow ever slower as upper levels grew reluctant to ask higher levels questions. The chain of command that Lucifer used required that archangels under him use authority over others who had authority over still others all who were to never question those above them and simply do what they were told to do. Completed tasks were regularly evaluated and those who performed better were moved up the chain of command and those who did less well were moved down. This resulted in a very rapid passing of directions downward as the subsequent activities were completed very quickly and missions were finished often ahead of schedule. The higher the echelon of angels the higher the enjoyment using this approach. More and more of the lower angels began to dislike what was happening. Yet, almost all of the angels at all levels liked being the 'best' and coming in 'first' at least in the beginning.

There were two types of lower angels throughout the realm of heaven. One type liked doing exactly the same thing without change. They simply did the tasks automatically without thinking while their mind was elsewhere. These angels could hardly wait for the end of each work cycle so they could leave and enjoy doing some recreational activity. The other type simply liked to spend time enjoying what they were doing not just 'getting it done'. They worked 'overtime' simply for the enjoyment of their work. As they were often not as fast as the other type of angel in completing their tasks, on Lucifer's team these were the ones who usually were the ones 'demoted' to fewer desirable tasks to make room for others to

move up. Those who found themselves demoted looked for opportunities to change to other teams as soon as they could.

In Lucifer's team, when it came time to receive rewards each level received a little less than those of the higher rank above them. The rewards those at the bottom who did most of the hands-on work seemed to grow less and less. More and more it seemed like they were also getting less thank you and other forms of appreciation for what they did from those angels above them who ordered them around. As new missions were begun, the number of archangels and higher-level angels requesting to be part of Lucifer's task force increased until those giving directions often outnumbered those who were doing the actual work.

Finally, to keep from losing all the lower angels, Lucifer refused to allow lower angels' unscheduled transfers to other teams lead by the other two Great Archangels. They had to wait until it was time to rotate to other teams. Very slowly and virtually unnoticed by other angels something odd was taking place. Many archangels who remained only on Lucifer's team were beginning to lose some of their abilities and were actually moving toward the level of ability that lower angels were initially given when created. In time, though created as archangels they no longer possessed the greater ability they were given at their creation.

Elohim noticed this occurrence and began to be concerned. They talked to Lucifer about how he was managing his team and their concern for lower ranking angels. Lucifer made the changes he needed to satisfy their concerns. A ripple ran through the ranks as changes were made that revealed some were not overly happy about making changes. However, there was a noticeable improvement in the attitude of lower ranking angels. In general, nothing seemed like it was really broken but things were beginning to bend. There was

The Beginning of the Beginning

simply something that was not exactly right. Something needed to be done.

.....

While working diligently together on an assigned task, two angels were talking about things in general when one asked the other a startling question.

“Did you hear what Lucifer said as we were discussing this task?” Dabarel asked the other.

“No, my mind was somewhere else. What was it?” the other responded.

“One of the archangels asked him if he knew how to change a duodenum structure into a pentagon structure,” he answered.

“And..., and..., what did he say?” the other asked becoming interested.

“Lucifer just looked at him as if he were just plain stupid and said ‘Why would one ever want to make something complex into something simple?’” Dabarel answered.

“I sometimes wonder just how smart Lucifer really is.” the other mused.

“Oh, he is quite smart but when it comes to being creative or initiating something new, he always seems to defer to others or acts

like it is beneath him to do so,” Dabarel said out loud but then quickly looked about to make sure no one heard him.

“Say, I remember the time we were all gathered around Yeshua as He brought a Stegarsoferous creature to life,” the other angel said contributing to the conversation. “Why, Lucifer just stood there and all he could say was ‘magic’. Just as if he thought the creature just, ‘poof’, came into existence only by saying the right words. He acted as if he did not understand that it was the result of all the work Yeshua and others did to put all the pieces together so the creature could take shape and come to life while we worked on and completed over billions of other projects. It’s like Lucifer really thinks it is possible for everything to just appear out of nothing with no intelligence, planning, or development. If you know the correct ‘magic’ word to say you can make anything appear,” the other angel finished with, “like you can get something for nothing.”

“Hah Ha,” Dabarel laughed, “that’s the funniest thing I ever heard. I thought everyone knows that there is a price to be paid for everything. Someone has to pay or do the work or nothing gets done. Yeshua taught that to all of us one time when we were tired of working and asked that He just speak the word and finish the work for us. We knew He could do it. Presto, whatever He thought and said would simply appear out of nothing. He affirmed that, yes, He and Yah could do that by making something materialize from the pure energy within Their being, but then we would not realize what they had already accomplished eons before in eternity. They wanted us to share in the creative effort it takes for things to get done and for new things to be made.”

Dabarel began to work in earnest on his tasks while his thoughts pondered some uncomfortable questions that seemed too deep for him to reason a satisfactory answer. He thought, was there

The Beginning of the Beginning

something not exactly right about Lucifer? Yes, he answered his own question. Then he thought, what is it and how could it possibly be so? It was as if Lucifer had forgotten some very basic and fundamental things he had been given at the time of his creation and was now trying to find other ways to do things rather than simply following the general guidelines and specific instructions of Elohim. Shortly, afterwards Dabarel finally got his transfer to Michael's team. He never wanted to go back to Lucifer's team again.

Others in the heavenly realm also were experiencing a similar feeling with questions that seemed unimaginable. This situation slowly rose to the point it began to really concern Elohim. Finally, at a meeting in which the three presented their latest accomplishments something happened. Again, Lucifer's team finished first and best with Michael's team a close second and Gabriel's team a close third. As he was rewarded, Yah saw a flash of several emotions in Lucifer that He had never seen in another angelic being. At first, He hesitated to put a name on it but it troubled Him deeply.

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 6

The Concept of a Physical Realm

After the meeting when all the angels were dismissed to their teams with rewards for them to share, Yah called for Yeshua to meet Him in the special chamber, called the Holy of Holies, which no other beings could enter except Elohim.

“Have you noticed anything different about Lucifer?”
Yahweh asked Yeshua.

“So, you have noticed it also,” Yeshua answered with a concerned look.

“At first I thought it was simply self-confidence but now I feel it is much more.”

“It feels to me like, what can I call it?” Y’shua put to words what they felt, *“pride, or arrogance?”*

“How is it possible?” remarked Yah whose brow wrinkled deep with concern, ***“Those feelings should never occur in any of our angels.”***

“Lucifer was given virtually everything. Everything, at the very moment he came to life. He did not have to develop or work to achieve it like the other angels have. The trouble seems to be that he is rapidly growing in self-awareness of his superiority over the rest of the angelic host. It is like he not only respects his greater position but that he has begun to really like it, goading over it, and

is beginning to look down on others, even Michael and Gabriel,” Y’shua stated.

“After Lucifer’s creation I asked myself, ‘What should be our next creative venture?’ Then I thought ‘Why not go the next step and actually create others of our kind, not just angelic beings, but exactly like us?’ With our nature and abilities, they too could be creators and give life to new forms as well as be overall guides for the angelic host. They would be our children and ours would become an Elohim-family that would grow beyond you and me and the Holy Spirit. Now, I fear that would be a disastrous mistake,” Yah said with sadness in His voice.

“But, not so if done differently from our past creative endeavor,” Yeshua said and then hesitated a moment before continuing, “I have an idea. What if we created an entire realm that is not like our heavenly realm? Made of substances that are temporary. Let’s say a physical realm in which we create a habitat with copies of creatures and things like those that we have here and even more. All living things would go through a cycle of birth, growth, maturity, and finally death.”

“Death?” Yah repeated with a startled voice.

“Yes, Death. A cessation of life, becoming non-existent,” Yeshua explained, “Life would grow to full maturity, and during the maturity phase would multiply providing a constant increase in its kind. Each life form would have a period of maturity and after a period of time would then begin to grow old and eventually stop living.”

“I think I get the picture. So, in this physical realm besides creatures like we have created here in heavenly realm we introduce

The Beginning of the Beginning

a being also made of physical substance that looks, thinks, and has some abilities like us?” Yah asked as He pondered the near endless possibilities of the idea.

“Exactly, but his level of being will be greatly limited in both behavior and ability,” Yeshua continued, *“We teach him and allow him to choose right from wrong in order to develop our character and nature. Developing character requires the need of starting small and growing in both knowledge and ability. Although this being will be physical, we could place within his conscious mind a spirit essence that will not only separate him from every other life form but will serve as a link with us. We will keep a record here in heaven of each life from conception through each stage of development. He will have dominion over all other creatures on Earth. He will learn to thrive in his habitat and most importantly, he will be guided by Us to learn great truths concerning physical and spiritual matters. We will give him time to demonstrate his obedience and loyalty to us. We will know his very thoughts and feelings intimately to assure us that he is totally dedicated and completely committed to our way of being. Once he makes the choice to truly become like us, we will place within him an essence of Our being, we will have the Holy Spirit unite with his spirit. From that time on, the Holy Spirit will directly inspire and guide him. He will initially become as it were a babe in spirit to grow and learn spiritual matters as he lives his physical life. We will then transform him from the physical to be born into spirit like us in the spirit plane in which We exist at the appropriate time.”*

“And if he fails and declines to become one with Us?” Yah asked.

“The mind and spirit of such a being will not be like other creatures we have made here in heaven or those placed in a physical

realm. Even though the mortal physical body will eventually die its spirit will continue. If our Spirit is added to its spirit then its mortal physical body will change after death to an immortal one like ours,” Yeshua acknowledged. *“Those human spirits that do not have our Spirit will be temporarily given a body that will not perish until it has reaped what it has sown and be punished for a time that will seem like an eternity for the mortal spirits for their evil ways. Eventually that evil human spirit will again be united with its physical body and both will suffer eternal damnation and be destroyed. I really believe that such individuals will be the very rare exception. Think of it, there will eventually be many beings just like us, eventually even more than the great angelic host. I am convinced that practically all of these human beings will choose to be like us once they understand the entire truth of our way. Their reward will be eternal life in their new spirit body with their human spirit united with the Holy Spirit to live with us for all eternity.”*

“I must now face the fact that other beings we have created are after all fallible,” Yah said soberly, ***“However it is hard for me to consider creating some beings like us even if they are as you say physical and then having even just a few of them put to death because they become sinful and disobedient.”***

“But, can you imagine never creating life again? Can you imagine eternity with only us to shape destiny? Can you imagine what it would be like if you were alone and I never existed?” Yeshua questioned.

“No, that is inconceivable,” Yah sighed, ***“You are right. Your idea of creating a physical realm is a very good idea. Adding others to our family would be absolutely wonderful beyond words. Get with the Elders and start working on the plans. Work only on creating a physical realm. Do not mention the creation of a being***

The Beginning of the Beginning

like us at this time. Once you have completed the basic outline and framework of this new world, we will present it to the heavenly host and then begin work to bring it into existence.”

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 7

Planning the Physical Universe

Beyond time and space, the spirit realm flourished with the creations of Elohim. The Great Elohim, Yeshua was not sitting upon His throne. He was in a special new workshop that He and Yah had created that at this time was restricted so no other beings except the Holy Spirit could enter. Before Him was a dark black sphere of a vast empty universe. Yeshua walked around His small working three-dimensional holographic model that He used to study the entire physical universe. He had already used it to simulate the development of galaxies full of stars expanding outward from a planet in the center of the universe He called Earth. Yes, the actual universe would be made of physical matter and yes, it would eventually self-destruct if the power of Elohim did not sustain it. Nevertheless, Elohim would make it last until all that They had planned had been accomplished.

They would create and sustain every molecule and control the path of all celestial bodies to exist and move according to Their will. Created matter would come from the unlimited energy present in Elohim's very Spirit. Many millions of years later, mankind would learn about creating energy from matter, but the reverse of creating matter from energy was something only Elohim was capable of doing. A very small sphere of pure energy from Elohim would be placed in the very center of the vast empty universe and at Yeshua's word this ball of energy would explode sending particles of matter outward from its center to form the planet Earth. Yeshua would actually be at the very center of this energy, shaping the physical matter created from the power of Their Spirit, and then placing it where He had planned for each molecule to be as creation took place.

After an extended period of time after the initial creation of Earth was completed, They planned to send another much larger sphere of pure energy that would surround the planet to be used to fill the universe with all kinds of celestial bodies. While Elohim had measured and knew the exact number of each and every kind of celestial body and force in the entire universe once it was begun, it would be beyond the ability of mankind to fully grasp the scope of this creation. In time, mankind would be able to barely step off his home planet but otherwise only be able to view the universe as a vast expanse that seemed without boundary or measure like eternity itself.

In the special workshop, Yeshua could use His infinite power to change His size so He could hold the Earth in the palm of His hand or actually go deep into a basic atom and ride an electron about the nuclei. As He thought about His creation, His thoughts went beyond just the creation of the Earth. He pictured in His mind a vast universe that would be mostly an immense empty vacuum where celestial bodies moved at incredible speed and covered distances immeasurable by mortals. Some of these bodies would generate light from a fusion reaction while others contained various minerals and gases. Various bodies would attract each other by a force He created and called gravity. In the galaxies were solar systems containing stars with circling planets and moons. As He saw the physical realm in His mind's eye, He again contemplated the dimension He called time. The distance in the universe would be so great He would measure it by the time light traveled from one celestial body to another. This He called light years. Within the vast expanse of the universe, the great-unseen power of the Holy Spirit would guide every movement. He already knew every galaxy, star, and planetary system that would be formed. Yes, He thought, every

The Beginning of the Beginning

molecule, every atom, would find its place. Satisfied with the plan, He called Yah and went over the final details with Him **10**.

However, this model would not be the model all other spirit beings would see or begin to work on. In a second workshop, there was another model of the universe but it was totally empty. It awaited the creation of one tiny planet that would be called Earth that would exist within the vast void of the universe. Elohim would be the light that shown on this planet. As He could move about the planet at the speed light travels from one place to another, the entire surface would have light. It would be as if He were everywhere at the same time. Time: this would be a new concept.

Initially, only vegetation would cover the land. It would grow, die, and sink beneath a primordial swamp that would provide the mineral nourishment of various ferns and trees. In time, this rotting vegetation would be compacted and heated until some of it formed a black liquid, others would produce a gaseous substance, and others would even solidify into something like black rock that man would much later call coal. Unknown to the angels, all these substances would burn and provide for energy needs, as the earth would eventually be populated with not only animals and creeping things but also mankind that would take a shape like its Creators.

As Yeshua reviewed His plans, He experimented with the various living things from microscopic single cells to plants and later complex animals that would live in the waters, on the land, and soar in the atmosphere He watched them go through a complete cycle: birth, maturity, reproduction, longevity, slow decay, and finally death. Physical matter existed as various solids, liquids, and gases. Much of the Earth's surface would be covered with water and the living creatures would actually be mostly composed of water as well.

Together, Yeshua and Yah both thought everything through many times, as They pondered every detail of the creation and how each part interacted with the rest. There would be a dependency that connected each plant and later creature with others that had to be maintained for each to thrive.

As eternity passed, Yeshua tried to think of everything that was needed to be worked out and coordinated. Just when He thought He had something all figured out, Yah would stop by and ask a few questions or make a comment. Boom, Yeshua would think as all His work crumbled into nothingness. Unworkable because He had overlooked this or did not plan for that. Finally, Yah came in to look over what Yeshua had done. Yah said nothing but made a “***Hum***” sound from time to time. Finally, He turned to see Yeshua looking downward somewhat dejected.

“What is the matter?” Yah asked.

“What do I need to change this time?” Yeshua responded with a sigh of resignation.

“Now, why would you consider changing anything that is already perfect?” Yah replied with a grin.

Yeshua was so overwhelmed that he could hardly speak. He sat down on a bench and slowly took some breaths. Then he smiled and all he could say was, “finally.”

Chapter 8

Creating the Earth

It would be quite a feat for Yeshua to sit back and watch the angels try to put the planet and all its features together like a puzzle. But, He would do this to share the experience of creating something new. Yeshua did not waste any time until He called a meeting with the three Great Archangels and the twenty-four elders and began discussing the concept of creating a physical universe. Except for Him, no one at the meeting knew He had already worked out the complete plan. He wanted the angels to have a part so He did not tell them about what He had already done. For the others, this was all new and they would excitedly be involved with it from the beginning. After the meeting, Yeshua took the three Great Archangels into the second workshop He had set apart for this stage of developing the physical universe and the planet Earth. He told them to take a short break and then begin assembling their teams for the greatest endeavor any of them had ever been a part of to that moment.

Each took their teams that had an additional thousand angels to do their part in planning and developing how the Earth would come into being. They made pieces like a puzzle and began to place them in the three-dimensional working model. Yeshua oversaw what the teams developed and watched as the model of the Earth started shaping up. He smiled as the model the angels were developing began to mirror most of the details of the one He had made in His special workshop. At a few critical junctions, He helped the three teams to combine their efforts. There were many times, Yeshua had to provide an input to get a team past a deadlock or to back up and try another approach.

Finally, the planning was completed and the model was finally put together in one piece so to speak. Now it was time to unveil it to the entire angelic host. As the host entered the throne-room, there was sense of excitement. They were full of wonder as they saw suspended above the crystal floor in front of the thrones something that was covered by a drape and they were not able to see what it was. After all were assembled, Yeshua stood and walked to the draped object. A hush quieted the throne room as He addressed the angelic band.

“My friends,” Yeshua began, “What you are about to see revealed is the culmination of very hard work by the project teams of Michael, Gabriel, and Lucifer.”

A roar of applause and shouts of approval filled the room. As the cheering went on Yeshua called the three Great Archangels to join Him and stand next to the draped object. The roar grew even louder, as each of the Great Archangels took a bow and then pointed to their team and waved to them to also stand. Finally, Yeshua raised both hands to get the applause to taper off.

“What you see here is a replica or model of something we are about to create. So, without further a due, here it is,” Yeshua said as He pulled the drape off the model. *“This is the planet Earth within a physical Universe.”*

Almost unexpected after all the cheering that had been taking place, there was a hush as the angels looked in wonder at the small three-dimensional replica of the universe with the single solitary planet called Earth in its very center that the three angelic teams had been working to develop. As they watched, the model slowly grew larger so they could see in more detail the vibrant colors of the

The Beginning of the Beginning

Earth's surface of land and the sparkling water reflecting the light of Elohim. The 'Ah's' and, 'Oh's' finally passed followed by the thunderous sound of applauses and praises that rose and swept from one end to the other as arms reached out to point at various details of the planet as it revolved before them.

Then Yah rose from His throne, walked to the edge of the platform, and looked about. He smiled and nodded to each of the twenty-four elders, then to each of the three Great Archangels who had gone over and now stood on the right side of the elders' thrones, and finally to Yeshua standing next to the model.

“Your hard work and dedication to this project has been beyond words I could use to thank you and acknowledge praise to you, my loyal servants,” Yah began and then stopped as the entire congregation of the heavenly host stood and applauded demonstrating their love and faithfulness to their Elohim. When the applause subsided and the angelic band had again taken their seats, Yah continued.

“This new world will provide an opportunity for all to discover new things that have never before existed. Together we will shape its matter into the new life forms that we create. We all will possibly marvel as its initial stages transform beyond our expectations.” Again, there was a standing ovation by the entire angelic host. At this time, Yeshua walked up the steps to stand beside Yah in front of Their thrones. It was His time to speak to the assembly.

“Finally, it is time to go outside the spiritual realm we have lived in for eternity. It is time for physical matter to appear in a physical realm separate from our own. You see before you only a small model of this new realm. Now it is time to see the real universe come into being. Behold, the Universe!” Yeshua announced and

then He raised his arms. As He began to spread His hands apart there was a loud tearing sound and above the throne room it seemed as if a curtain was being tore apart and through a crack revealed total darkness on the other side.

Then Yeshua commanded, *“Ye servants of the Most High, put your hands over your ears and close your eyes until I tell you to remove your hands and open your eyes.”*

Every creature and angel in heaven placed their hands over their ears and tightly closed their eyes. Yeshua turned around and faced Yah. Yah nodded and then He placed both of His hands on Yeshua’s shoulders. Yeshua pointed His hands toward the darkness and looking upward; He opened His mouth and cried out, *“BAWRRAW!”* (Which means absolutely create, do, make.)

The sound uttered from the mouth of Yeshua was the likes of which no creature in heaven had ever heard before. Had Yah not placed the power of the Holy Spirit over the host of heaven, many would have been consumed by the force that came from Yeshua’s mouth. From His voice, an unmeasurable powerful bolt of pure energy from the very beings of Yeshua, Yah, and the Holy Spirit sent a light and sound so great no other being except Yah could have endured hearing or seeing it come forth as it tore apart an even wider crack in the veil of the heavenly realm further revealing the pitch black empty void. Into the center of that void, Yeshua had spoken and His word combined with the power of Yah and the Holy Spirit created a ball of pure energy **11**. It then exploded sending powerful particles of energy that froze into solid, liquid, and gaseous particles of matter that circled and rolled into a larger ball that became the planet Earth. Then the veil snapped shut.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Yeshua took a deep breath as He staggered but was steadied by Yah's hands. Then He turned to address the angelic host. His words actually went straight to the minds of everyone assembled there. *"My loyal servants remove your hands and open your eyes and behold the planet Earth!"*

In the heavenly realm, the angels heard in their minds the words of Yeshua and opened their eyes to look upon the physical realm through a veiled surface that separated the two realms. The veiled surface was transparent when viewing the universe from heaven but on the other side only Elohim and the angels could see the heavenly realm from inside the universe. While it was taking billions of years in Earth time for all the pieces to actually take their places, yet in the heavenly realm it seemed like it was but a hardly more than a blink of an eye. They watched still fascinated by the intricate interworking of physical laws guiding all that Elohim had made. Yeshua smiled at His creation because it was very good.

"My loyal and faithful servants, this is just the beginning of a vast and unending project that you all will find the most enjoyable and rewarding endeavor you have ever worked on. In time, each of you will have your assignments for the planning and development of all the living creatures of a myriad of sizes that will inhabit the Earth. Beyond this you will be involved in developing other celestial bodies even beyond the Earth," Yeshua announced.

Yah then waved for the entire host of heaven to come down and ask questions. He and Yeshua as well as the twenty-four Elders and the three Great Archangels began answering their questions. After a very long period of questions and answers, the assembly ended and the angelic host returned to work on their current tasks and duties as they wondered about exactly what they would be doing involving the physical universe.

Yah left and attended to other matters while Yeshua carefully compared everything about the Earth in the otherwise empty void of the physical universe to the model He had created. Yes, He thought, everything is happening exactly according to plan. The power of the Holy Spirit that did His will had shaped Earth and Yah and Yeshua would provide light to the entire sphere. The only differences that Yeshua detected were the reflections of light from the actual Earth appeared in a greater level of awesome colors and shades when viewed in reality than from what He had seen in the models. In the final stages of that burst of energy that He had sent to form matter of rock, dirt, and water He had placed the beginnings of organic matter to become grass, shrubs, ferns, trees, and other plant life of the myriad forms of vegetation as well as microscopic bacteria, insects and all matter of creeping creatures needed to balance and sustain life on Earth. The various sized hills, mountains, valleys, plains, streams, rivers, and oceans and all the plant life that had come into being seemed to be shining out their reflected light as if to proclaim their joy at being created. From within the Heavenly realm light from Yah and Yeshua was transmitted to surround the planet Earth so it would stay warm and that life could come forth and multiply at a microscopic level.

Chapter 9

Planning Living Creatures

After some ‘time’ Yah went to the second workshop that was different from the one Yeshua had personally used. It was the one the angels used to develop the model of the Earth. This second one was open to the entire angelic band. He observed Yeshua busily working going back and forth from the model to the Earth in the actual physical universe while several angels accompanied Him back and forth. In the physical universe, time continued to pass. It had been several hundred million earth years since the energy Yeshua had sent into the universe had solidified into the planet earth.

“How are things going, Yeshua?” Yah asked as Yeshua appeared coming back from the universe to the model in the workshop.

“Great, Yah” Yeshua replied as he looked up from his work. ***“Just about everything is exactly like We planned in the model and now on the Earth. I did decide to adjust the gravitational pull of all things and now have a balance that works even better than what I had first planned. When We are ready to introduce animal life, we will also introduce additional creeping things, and insects in a much greater variety than what We initially started. Some of them must be created almost simultaneously for there to be a balance that can become self-sustaining without our continuous intervention. All the angelic beings want to tour the real Earth from surface to the core to see what it is like.”***

“Remember that open chamber five hundred miles below the surface?” Yah reminded Yeshua as both of them began to laugh.

“I remember the look on Gabriel’s face when the magma shot up from the core and exploded all around him as he was studying the formation of crystals. Suddenly, all he could see was white hot magma with him right in the middle of it.”

“It was quite an experience,” the angel Gabriel stated as he suddenly appeared in their presence.

“Just the angel I needed to see,” Yeshua replied. *“How are things going with the plans for the animals that Lucifer and the twenty-four elders are working on?”*

“Very well as they have not stopped since you gave them the ideas and they are nearly finished with the details.”

Together these omnipotent supreme Elohim beings continued to review all the detailed plans, drawings, and models that were spread out three-dimensionally suspended in midair at a speed that looked like a blur to other beings nearby. From ‘time to time’ during the course of eternity past, it was common for Them to give some of their creative power to some of the angels to see what they would do with it. They thanked Gabriel and he disappeared.

“I want to see the new and changed animals they have been working on,” Yah said and then commanded. *“Send in Lucifer.”*

Instantly an angel appeared before them. He was tall and stately and presented an awesome presence that only the archangels Gabriel and Michael came close in comparison.

“Omnipotent Ones,” he said as he spread his arms and bowed from his waist before Yah and Yeshua. “You have beckoned me?”

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Greetings, Lucifer. Please show Us what you have been working on,” requested Yeshua.

Lucifer put his hands together and then opened them to reveal a holographic three-dimensional panorama of animals of many shapes and sizes moving about in the space before them. They were reptilian and some appeared very aggressive.

“Considering the possible imbalances that the environment might present, these creatures will be very robust. They will not only survive, they will thrive on the planet,” **Lucifer stated confidently.**

“The environment will actually be even more stable on this planet as I have already tweaked a few variables since we last met. We have simultaneously introduced additional varieties of plant life, insects, and other organisms. In lab experiments and now in real life they show a remarkable stability,” Yeshua replied somewhat countering Lucifer’s remark about imbalances, *“Why the large teeth on those animals?”*

“The original plan was primarily that of plant eaters and carrion creatures to eat the remains of those which died so organisms that aid in decomposing the remains would not thrive and possibly spread and cause disease to other living creatures. I have modified the behavior of some to thrive on a diet of the flesh of other living animals. The weaker ones that would otherwise soon begin to falter and suffer great pain will be mercifully put out of their misery much more quickly. These beasts will be a great help in maintaining the balance of all animals.”

“I have always encouraged initiative and new ideas,” Yah acknowledged. *“This is a slightly different approach. Hmm, I see*

your point. Yes, this is a fine accomplishment. Thank you. Continue your work, Lucifer,” Lucifer was dismissed but remained in the background listening as Yah turned and instructed, *“We will need the final plans for all the other creatures very soon. We need the teams of Michael and Gabriel to double check the numbers of each kind that we need to introduce in the beginning along with projections of their multiplying as well as projected life spans. I don’t want any species of plants or animals to overpower the balance of other plants and other life forms that will be initially established.”*

After hearing all that Yah said, Lucifer again bowed and was gone.

Yeshua and Yah then went into Their special workshop. In it not only was there a model of the planet Earth, there was a universe full of an almost immeasurable number of other stars, planets, galaxies, and other bodies in space. They had decided to allow the twenty-four elders along with Michael and Gabriel access to it. This had been decided after Yah and Yeshua had discussed some concern about Lucifer’s attitude. They had both decided to keep this workshop a secret from Lucifer until their concern was resolved. Then Yeshua said aloud, *“I need to see Michael.”*

Instantly Michael along with Gabriel appeared before them. As they usually did, they not only bowed their heads, they also knelt on one knee before them showing respect and complete obeisance to Them. Yeshua smiled and motioned for them to approach, they rose and drew near, and all exchanged greetings.

“After studying this model, I have created of an expanded universe I wanted to know what your findings were.” Yeshua requested.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“After we studied the plans and the model of the celestial bodies throughout the universe and how it is integrated with the Earth and discussing this with Gabriel, we concur with your findings. Various planetary systems can be introduced into the universe without disrupting the Earth whenever You are ready. The Earth will do well within the new solar system positioned as the fourth of the nine planets from its sun in what you plan to create. It fits quite nicely in the galaxy you have named the Milky Way. Other planetary systems and galaxies can eventually begin to fill the universe,” Michael answered.

“Setting the Earth among the nine primary planets about the star requires a careful balance to provide light and warmth that You are presently giving the Earth,” Gabriel added. “In this new system, there will be climate changes during each full circle and placing the Earth as the fourth planet will keep it within the temperature parameters you specified. Placing a moon to circle it will provide some light on the face away from the sun. Also, the distant stars will provide additional light during its rotation once they are created.”

“We have also checked the paths of all celestial bodies of a great size that might impact planet Earth and cause total extinction of all living organisms. We ran a simulation over ten thousand times each covering ten thousand full circles of the Earth around the sun to check out the possibility of this happening. While there will be some collisions, most will be relatively small from celestial bodies such as meteors and asteroids. Except a couple of asteroids will come very close and one of them if it were allowed to impact will result in extinction of all living creatures. There are also several bodies at extreme distances several galaxies away that appear very unstable but we could not be sure if they will or will not enter the solar system and impact the fourth planet. There may be somethings we are not

aware of in some other part of the universe that might result in a cataclysmic collision. There are simply too many things for us to take into consideration of how they will all interact to be absolutely sure that the Earth will not be adversely affected. We are also quite sure you already know about such things,” Michael stated.

“Yes, We have taken those into account and We will control their paths when the time comes to add the other cosmic elements in the actual universe when we create it. I commend you on your diligence,” Yah exclaimed, *“The twenty-four elders had studied the model of the expanded physical universe and they must have overlooked those bodies and their potential to cause serious problems to planet Earth. Well done. Both of you continue to go beyond what is requested of you fulfilling every measure of my intent as well as the strict letter of my commands.”*

“It is not only our duty but our joy to serve you both,” Gabriel reverently replied.

“How is Lucifer doing?” Michael asked.

“He is doing fairly well. You might be surprised at what he has done lately with his part of the project,” Yeshua answered, *“It seems kind of humorous. After Lucifer was first created, the opinion of nearly all of the angels who interacted with him was that there was not a creative bone in his body. But, now. Now, he just keeps on wanting to change everything. I have to caution him and keep reminding him to consider the whole plan and the other life forms that are affected by any changes he or anyone else wants to make.”*

Both Michael and Gabriel without thinking raised their eyebrows in astonishment. Then they left to continue their work.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Yeshua went with Yah and sat down on His throne on the right hand of Yah.

“Something is troubling you, Yah,” Yeshua said as He saw a frown on Yah’s face and His eyes closed in thought.

“Yes,” Yah replied.

He then swept his hand in a circular motion above their heads. Instantly they were transported to the sanctuary, the Holy of Holies that is isolated from all other beings including the large beast like angels that stood about their thrones.

“My feelings about Lucifer continue to cause me concern.”

“I am also becoming more concerned. His ideas of using selective breeding and the type of changes he is interested in making has revealed something that troubles me,” Yeshua stated.

“Yes, it is like he is trying to outsmart, out maneuver, out-do even Us in the development of life to dwell on the Earth.”

“Well, we have always rewarded angels that show initiative. Perhaps, we should have given the lead on this project to Michael or Gabriel?” Yeshua pondered.

“No, Lucifer was the right choice. A busy hand does not find time for idle or careless behavior. I wanted this project completed quickly and he was the one to see that it was done fast. Still, his attitude continues to bother me. Those troublesome feelings I had about him continue to return from time to time. This project will either make or break him. Do you think he suspects the real reason

why we have not created more angels? Why we have turned our creative energy into developing a physical realm?"

"I do not think so," Yeshua answered and then reminded Yah, "But, remember, nothing you have ever set your hand upon to do has ever been for naught. Good will come of it all, be assured."

Part Two: The Creation of Living Creatures

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 10

Covering the Earth with Living Creatures

Working together Elohim and most of the angelic band made all the animals, small and great by putting together the elements on earth and then placing them across the surface of the earth. It was Elohim who breathed the breath of life into each creature. In turn, each rose to its feet. The smaller animals quickly scampered off into the underbrush to search for others of its kind. The largest ones raised their heads and roared and then began to walk as of royal birth as their eyes looked for food. Most of the animals gathered into groups of their own kind and then raced across plains and hills stopping to graze in the lush foliage. Time quickly passed and the creatures multiplied. Almost everything went predictably like the simulations in the workshop in heaven.

“So, how do you think Lucifer is doing as the overall head of the angelic host in developing Project Earth?” Yah asked Yeshua when they were left alone in the workshop.

“His attention to detail and ambition is being put to the limit in completing all these tasks,” Yeshua explained. *“Since the last great assembly in which we announced plans to expand the creation of celestial bodies to populate the physical universe, he has been at every open meeting and discussion of even the smallest part and still never failed to complete his other assignments as well. I also feel a lot better as we have Michael and Gabriel double checking everything when they are not working in the special workshop studying our plans for the rest of the universe while Lucifer concentrates on Earth.”*

“I have been surprised that Lucifer has not been inquisitive about the special workshop after he learned of its existence,” Yah remarked.

“He has been nearly overwhelmed with everything that is happening on Earth to worry about what might eventually take place throughout the Universe. He thinks the special workshop is just an extension of the Holy of Holies. While he is aware that the Twenty-Four Elders enter it, he does not have a clue that Michael and Gabriel have also been allowed to enter it,” Yeshua responded.

“How are the flesh-eating animals he designed working out?” Yah questioned.

“They have done a lot better than I imagined. I remember when Lucifer first brought in a number of changes to the plans of some of the living creatures based on the overall framework for environmental balances between plant, insect, and animals we had developed here in the workshop. He was so eager. ‘These here,’ he would say pointing to the drawings and models, eat these plants. These here, the more aggressive ones, eat the plant eaters. The balance is attained because the plant eaters multiplying much faster than the carnivores. Notice that those kinds while more docile are still pretty crafty in keeping from being easy prey for dinner.’ Certainly, goes a bit beyond the ‘aged and decrepit remover’ role idea. Michael and Gabriel got into the act also with some great ideas. The ideas from the three of them have caused the Twenty-Four Elders to work nonstop to complete the intricate details for expanding the types of creatures in the actual creation. See those creatures there, the little ones, and those flying, and the plants over there? Michael thought of that little one and Gabriel proposed that flying one, together they determined many of those additional plants that will also be needed. Lucifer’s ideas were quite original and

The Beginning of the Beginning

stretched the limits somewhat but I decided to go ahead and give him a chance and put some of them into the plan for variety if nothing else.”

Later, Gabriel appeared and handed Yeshua a report and then disappeared.

Yeshua paused, *“Uh Oh, from these new reports from Michael that Gabriel just handed me, reveals that those creatures from Lucifer’s designs are beginning to multiply faster than projected. Lucifer asserts that this is just a temporary and insignificant fluctuation. He remains confident that this will not upset the balance in the long run.”*

“Have any of the angels asked any questions or made any conjecture as to the special ‘creature’ we recently introduced?”
Yah said in a guarded voice.

“I don’t think any have a clue about it. As we agreed after we began creating the plans for the expanded universe only the Twenty-Four Elders were also informed about the real reason for this stage of development and they have not said a word to anyone other than us. Not even Michael or Gabriel have been told about it,” Yeshua answered. *“It will come as a great surprise to all that this whole system on Earth has just a preparatory role to play. I have watched as the vegetation has settled under the swamps and has been pressed down and is being compressed repeatedly. The transformation of decomposing vegetation as heat and pressure are applied is creating various solid, liquid, and gaseous materials to fuel the energy needs of the new creation and its inhabitants toward the end of a new cycle of life on the planet. Eventually all these creatures and vegetation that covers the earth will also reach the level we have determined as ideal, and then there will be a new upheaval that will bury everything*

from the surface up to several miles deep. When the time is right, we will tell all the angels the very reason for everything that has been created in the physical universe up to this time.”

“It seems the norm that none of the angels have looked much beyond what is being done in the here and now. Each creation and task has been an end in itself to them,” Yah noted. ***“I am anxious to see just how Lucifer responds to this. He has never been happy about surprises. I guess that is why he has always wanted to be on the inside and know about everything that is going on.”***

“Yes, even after all this time, he still seems to be at every meeting that is held. That is every meeting except for the meetings with the twenty-four elders where we discussed the main reason, we began this whole project,” Yeshua replied.

“Have you given the being a name?” Yah asked.

“I have,” Yeshua answered, *“It shall be called MAN.”*

Chapter 11

Planning Man's Creation

Yah and Yeshua looked upon the model they had created in their special separate workshop. Unlike the Holy of Holies wherein only Elohim could go, this place allowed the Twenty-Four elders along with Michael and Gabriel inside as well. While the two Great Archangels came in to work on the model of the physical universe, they were not aware of anything that was about to happening as far as the creation of man was concerned.

“The Elders have completed the design and testing of every internal and external system down to each atom of the man,” Yeshua was telling Yah. *“How amazing that a creature made of physical properties like flesh and blood that looks like us will one day actually become like us in spirit as well.”*

“This is the future,” Yah explained, *“no more will we create angelic beings. Once man has proven his absolute obedience to us, follows our way, and develops our very nature, only then will we change him.”*

“Are you still troubled?” Yeshua asked.

“Just a faint feeling of foreboding as I’ve never felt before,” Yah **replied.**

“The Elders have also reported that the physical specimens made very much like man were placed on the Earth and have survived and multiplied. They have a simple animal brain but the rest of the physical properties are much the same as man will have.

We first made some of them a lot more hairy and larger because they behave as an animal. They are like some of the creatures we called apes and they thrive in groups. Once we saw that they were doing just fine surviving we also made some more that were near the actual size we will make man including a larger animal brain. These new ones have less hair than their bigger 'cousins' do. It is interesting to see how they survive in the midst of all those much larger creatures. While I was watching a group of them, I observed that they instinctively have a way to make up for some of their lack of size and strength compared to other creatures. They have begun to use simple tools and have developed weapons to hunt for food and to defend themselves. They seem to enjoy eating meat more than berries and plants. However, the environment is a little too hot for them and they spend a lot of time seeking shelter from the sun. After our latest tests, we introduced some new vegetation and fruit to balance their diet so they can keep healthy. By crossing some plants, the new ones provided a sweeter tasting berry that they particularly enjoy when they find them as they search for food. In the long run, we need to revamp the kind of animals that will co-habit the Earth with man or he will have a great deal of trouble surviving among them."

"Did any of the angels show any concern over the addition of this man-like creature?"

"Only Lucifer initially, but when he saw they were really just a different form of animal he just went on with his work dealing with other things. He really loves those big flesh-eating reptiles and enjoys watching them attack the plant eaters. He even provoked a couple of different species of flesh eaters to see which one would be the stronger. Gabriel told him that was not the way things were supposed to be. He told Gabriel it was just a natural law being tested on Earth that he called 'the survival of the fittest'."

The Beginning of the Beginning

Even as they spoke, hundreds of millions of Earth years had passed by and the growth of vegetation on the Earth neared the set upon goal made by Elohim in their workshop before the plan to create the universe was revealed to the angelic host.

“I think it is about time to introduce the primary reason we created the universe and planet Earth to the angelic host,” Yah decided. ***“This is your project from start to finish, Yeshua. You have the honor of presenting it.”***

“Since I first conceived the idea of the creation of man it has filled my very being. It is on my mind continually. Even when I am doing other things and talking with others, it continues to revolve in my subconscious mind. I will do anything to ensure that it is a success, so man can become like us,” declared Yeshua.

“You may find out that it may cost you more than you could ever imagine,” Yah admonished.

“As I said and I declare an oath to you my EL, I will do whatever it takes to ensure that man becomes as one of us. Impossible as it sounds, I will see it done even if it were to cost me my very life,” Yeshua proclaimed.

Something inside Yah acknowledged that this possibility was very real even if it seemed, unthinkable? Was it also possible that the Great Archangel Lucifer might turn against Elohim? Unthinkable, surely it was unthinkable, it is just impossible for this to happen, or is it? Yah pondered.

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 12

Lucifer's Pride

“Oh my! Did you see that?” exclaimed one in the group of angels who looked upon a dramatic scene taking place on the surface of the Earth.

“As I promised, you are seeing things that you never saw before in heaven. Pretty awesome and exciting, isn't it?” Lucifer asked his companions.

“You've got that right,” most agreed while a few kept silent but occasionally made faces showing their disgust or lack of enjoyment of what they were seeing.

From his beginning, Lucifer had found that of the entire angelic band, those who had been created with a greater intellect or initially given a higher authority seemed to gravitate toward him. He had personally taken practically all the angels of heaven on a tour of the Earth as time passed and the creatures multiplied. He had begun to think of this as his planet and many had become very impressed with it and with him. For those who did not mirror his relish of such creatures and their antics, he made a mental note in order to avoid having them work on any of his new projects.

Below and about them moved the living creatures of the Earth. The angels remained unseen and could closely observe every gory detail. Three large two legged creatures had ganged up on a creature actually twice their size that had done fairly well so far using its long tail that contained several long and very sharp spikes to injure and keep the aggressors back. However, it had small teeth and could not

maintain its defense indefinitely against several ferocious attackers at one time. The attackers continued to come at it from different sides and eagerly ripped into the flesh of their victim with their large teeth and finally one of them clamped its jaws on their victim's neck until it slumped and fell to the ground mortally wounded and quickly died as the three took their time feasting on their fallen prey. After the attackers had their fill, many other smaller scavenger creatures took their turn devouring the fallen beast until only a skeleton remained covered with insects that picked it clean.

“You just wait and see,” announced Lucifer, “I am going to make other worlds in other planetary systems that will eventually make this place look like the playground of a moron.”

Yeshua had actually created the universe and the Earth and all that was above, below, and on it but He had allowed angelic beings to work with Him on the model of the planet as He made the forms of each living creature. He had asked each angel for their ideas and used them in many of the fine details. The Great Archangels Michael, Gabriel, and Lucifer had a greater role and more input than lower angels did. Still, it was by the power directly from Yeshua that they were able to do their parts in the creation process. It took the breath of life from Elohim for each pair of every species male and female to come to life on the planet. Afterwards each would breed and reproduce its kind. Lucifer had been selectively breeding many of the creatures to enhance larger sizes and promote certain traits such as aggressive behavior.

“What does Yeshua say about that?” one asked.

“Don't worry; Yeshua and Yah are so impressed by my work I can do anything I want with their blessing,” answered Lucifer. Lucifer began to think, ‘Actually I'm the one who is doing all the

The Beginning of the Beginning

work, more than the rest of the angels and really more than those other two favorites of Yah and Yeshua. I don't deserve to be kept on the same level as Michael and Gabriel. Why, I should be elevated to the level of the great Yeshua, maybe even higher.' The seeds of unspeakable evil began to grow within his mind as he continued to ponder his new goal of rising above all the angels including Gabriel and especially Michael. He pictured himself even reaching the point of sitting on a throne in heaven as an equal to Elohim. In time, he vainly thought that he might even rise above them. He gazed in a clear pool of water at his own reflection. He smiled as he saw what he thought was the most beautiful being to ever exist. No, his thoughts concluded, there is no other being that is like me in heaven or on Earth.

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 13

The Revelation of the human being called Man

When something special was about to take place, an assembly was called. The throne room hosted all such gatherings. The entire angelic host was present. Michael and Gabriel stood to the right side of Yeshua while Lucifer stood to the left of Yah. At each of the four corners about the thrones the great creatures with wings and faces like animals showed their teeth as they continued to look about as if on continual guard duty. No one had ever asked about them or why they were there. They just assumed they were decorations. Immediately in front of the thrones, the floor area shimmered like mirrored glass as the twenty-four elders sat quietly facing their masters.

However, this time for some reason there seemed to be an unusually high level of anticipation and excitement. Something special was about to happen, they could sense it. Some thought that Lucifer was going to be honored and raised to a throne to sit on the left side of Yah while Yeshua continued to sit on His right side. Some thought that there would be an announcement that new worlds were going to be created similar to what they had done for Earth with many of the angels being given greater responsibilities. Some thought a new angelic being was going to be created but how could one be created that was greater than Lucifer? Others did not try to speculate, as they knew whatever Yeshua and Yah did was always incredibly wonderful for all to enjoy and they loved the surprises.

“You servants of the Great Elohim, you have been called here to witness a momentous event,” Gabriel announced. “Without further delay Yeshua will now reveal it.”

Yeshua rose from His throne and began stepping down the stairs from the throne platform to stand on the glasslike surface before the twenty-four elder's thrones. He stopped and looked upward and side-to-side at the vast angelic band and then began to speak.

“Forever Yah and I have been your creators, your masters, and your friends. While you have been busy developing the models and then the actual planet Earth and the living creatures that were placed on the actual planet, there is one creature we have been working on that you are not aware of. Now we have decided that we want to share all that we have done with a new kind of being. This being after a great deal of time and testing will become exactly like Yah and I am. Not angels, not servants, but family members with all our power and glory forever,” as Yeshua spoke a cloaked object appeared upon the glass between the throne platform and the thrones of the elders. Yeshua turned about and faced it as He raised His hands to present it.

“Behold,” He proclaimed as the cloak began to fall off the object, *“The Man.”*

The cloak finished falling and revealed a model of a body standing there that looked exactly like Yah and Yeshua in every proportion. A whisper of excitement swept across the angelic host wondering what this meant. Lucifer's brow wrinkled as a grim expression covered his face and a rage of unimaginable fury began to fill his entire being.

“This is man,” Yeshua further explained. *“He will be made of physical substance from the Earth and placed there on the surface's ground to live. While physically mature at creation, he will be but*

The Beginning of the Beginning

an infant in ability and knowledge. He will be taught and in due time will learn and develop all the wisdom and truth of Elohim. At the end of his physical life, he will be changed to spirit and become Our offspring, Our very children with Elohim-like abilities. He will lead you as We have. He will be a creator of new worlds and will fill the universe with many worlds wherein Our family will forever grow. You angels of Elohim will find even greater work to perform and even greater rewards than you have ever had to fill you with unlimited joy and happiness for all eternity. Come and take a closer look at the Man.”

A loud applause broke out and songs of praise, joy, and expectation filled the throne room. While virtually undetectable to others Yah and Yeshua recognized that the applause did not come from the entire host of heaven. While many of the angelic beings came down to get a closer look at man there were pockets of angels whispering to each other. The look on their faces could not be disguised. They were very upset. All the angels that came down began to look over the charts with details that surrounded the man describing various attributes as well as the necessary requirements and the plans for the actual re-creation of the Earth. After some of the disgruntled angels read the changes they immediately disappeared.

It did not escape the attention of Yah or Yeshua that one of the three Great Archangels had left without taking a closer look at the model of the man or the charts about him in the display. He was a very troubled and angry Great Archangel. It seemed to him that all his ambitions in one fell swoop seemed to have crashed down around him with this announcement.

Chapter 14

Lucifer becomes Satan

After the unveiling of the model of man, most of the angels returned to their work excited and full of wonder. Some left troubled, upset, and very unhappy.

Lucifer could hardly contain the rage and anger that he felt inside. He had kept silent and quickly returned to a place inside the Earth that was very near its core. A series of large open caverns or chambers had become his ‘office for operations’ that he used to hold meetings and planning sessions with the angels under his charge. It even had a private area in which he was able to relax and contemplate what he wished to do. These caverns were spectacular and glowed with a slightly reddish orange hue from the white-hot magma that surrounded the floor they walked on beside a stream of molten lava that ran like a river along one side and cascaded like a waterfall down into a sea of liquid rock at one end. He sat brooding, seething with anger. A number of angels began to appear by his side to console him.

“I thought they were going to make you an Elohim,” one stated.

“It’s just not fair. After all you have done, what do they do to reward your hard work? Decide to make another being to become an Elohim instead of you,” said another.

“Did you get a close look at that thing? Talk about a low life; it is going to be made from the filthy dirt of this planet. Bet it couldn’t survive five seconds out in the universe above the Earth,” said still another.

“Better watch what you say, one of those puny pieces of dirt is going to be your boss someday,” one warned.

“Did you read the new specifications on the environment? Those changes are going to eliminate many of the creations on Earth we have worked so hard to develop,” one pointed out.

Finally, Lucifer exploded and yelled, “Actually every single creature I have worked so hard in developing has been scrubbed by these new plans just so this new creature can be created. Even the vegetation is to be changed down to the smallest microbe. Yeshua wants a ‘perfect habitat’ prepared just so, so for His new little darling,”

Lucifer had finally spoke out as the anger continued to boil within. He told himself that his suspicions from the beginning when he first learned about the plans to create the Earth were true. He felt something was in the works and that he and others had not been told the whole plan. Then he remembered times when he could not find Michael or Gabriel no matter where he looked. There must have been a secret meeting, no, a hiding place where he was not allowed to go. Michael and Gabriel and their kind and caring ways with the ‘worker bees’ as he often called the lower angels. Lucifer mocked the way he thought they must have spoken to the lower angels. “Oh, won’t you please do this and that. No. Oh, pray tell why not? Do it how? You mean like this? Why that is such a fine idea. Why, you are so wonderful and thoughtful. Did I say kind? Why, I cannot help but think that in time you will be promoted to the rank of an archangel?”

“All that kindness did not get any work done.” Lucifer spit and his spit vaporized as it hit the extremely hot floor while his thoughts

The Beginning of the Beginning

continued to race so that he could not stop from saying what he felt. “All this was just an elaborate hoax, a façade to hide what Elohim had really intended. We have all been deceived”, he fumed. “The question remains, just what are we going to do about it?” He looked about him at his followers and then continued.

“My friends, have you noticed that unlike Yah and Yeshua, I have not kept any of you ignorant of my hopes, plans, and ambitions,” he said slyly. “Yet, I wonder just how many other secrets do Yah and Yeshua hide from us? What they have done in planning to make man has been nothing short of stabbing us all in the back with treachery. For all eternity, they have built our hopes, let us work like dogs, and have continually expected us to be overjoyed at receiving the crumbs from their table. Now they go further to pull the rug out from under our feet leaving us groveling in the dust as outcasts.

“I knew something was wrong when the creation of Earth was first announced. I had wondered for eons, just why had they stopped creating angels anyway? I’ll tell you why. They are afraid of us. They have been so full of themselves constantly making us in various forms for their amusement and having us as their slaves to jump, run, and fetch according to their every whim. They probably came to realize that they had gone overboard in making too many of us. They now fear that they are no longer in total control of the heavens and together we have become much stronger than they are now.

“At first, they made this new universe as a distraction for us. Now they think they have found a way to regain their power by this new creature called Man. They think that if they make enough ‘Man creatures’ and give them some of the power from the Holy Spirit then they can retake control of the heavens. But, my friends, they can’t get the job done without our help. They need us to do what they are

no longer able to do. I'll tell you something else I fear, it would not be a surprise to me if you don't find some angels start disappearing just as soon as some of these 'Man things' start to become Elohim's."

"What do you mean, disappear?" one of the angels asked.

"Banished from heaven, the Earth, the universe, or wherever. Or possibly destroyed, **KILLED!**" screamed Lucifer hysterically.

"That can't happen, we are Spirit, we can't be destroyed, we can't die like those beasts that were created on Earth," another angel cried out in despair.

"Are you so sure?" Lucifer continued, "That which can create or bring to life might be able to destroy and take life away no matter what it is made of. You want to trust them? After learning, what they are going to do? After all, they have hidden from you? If so, then you better start getting ready to become extinct like those creatures we developed. All our hard work for so long to develop on the Earth, all Gone!"

"No, no, never," the angels around him angrily shouted to Lucifer.

"That's not fair," yelled others.

"What can we do?" one cried out above the others and all became quiet waiting for Lucifer's answer.

"I'll tell you what," Lucifer began to tell them, "each of you go and speak to other angels that you really trust and find out how they feel about becoming as extinct as the creatures we designed that were placed to roam the surface of this lousy rock floating alone in this

The Beginning of the Beginning

otherwise empty worthless universe. Find out if they are ready to stand with me when we move to stop this new Project Man before it can be started, or it will be the end of us all.”

Chapter 15

The Rebellion of Lucifer

Gabriel burst unannounced into the throne room like an explosion and fell down prostrate sobbing before Yah as He was sitting on His throne alone deep in meditation. Two of the huge creatures had turned and jumped down from their pedestals. They were growling and began to menacingly come toward him, ready to leap upon and tear to pieces this unexpected and unannounced intruder if he came any closer to the thrones. Yah waved them back to their places.

“Gabriel, what’s the matter. What troubles you so?” Yah asked as he stepped down from the throne and knelt beside the troubled Great Archangel and looked into his face.

“Oh, my Elohim,” he cried, “I heard two other angels talking. It was terrible the things they were saying. They and others are banding together with Lucifer to stop you from starting the creation of man.”

“So, Lucifer,” Yah said shaking his head, ***“You have finally revealed your true nature.”***

“Yeshua!” Yah called in a voice that only an Elohim could hear in the heavens and the universe.

Immediately, Yeshua stood beside Yah and together They helped Gabriel to his feet.

“Listen to what Gabriel has to say. Tell him every detail.”

Yeshua listened and began to smolder in anger at what He heard. Then He cried out.

“*Oh, Lucifer!*” Yeshua’s voice could barely be heard by the others as He was near choking with wrath, “*how could you?*”

Then calling out in a voice that thundered across the heavens and the universe reaching the Earth, Yah commanded, “***Lucifer, stand forth!***”

He and Yeshua turned and went up and sat down on Their thrones. Gabriel stood beside Yah’s left hand. Michael appeared and sensing a confrontation went up and stood at Yeshua’s right hand. On the sea of glass, a flash of lightning with an accompanying crash of thunder sounded as a thick cloud appeared. As the cloud began to disperse, They saw Lucifer arrogantly standing before Them. He did not come alone. All about him were tens of thousands of angels that included most of the archangels.

“You called,” he addressed Elohim in an insolent voice as he stood before Him standing upright with his chin raised refusing even to nod his head in respect to the great Elohim.

“*What have you done?*” demanded Yeshua.

“What do you mean, what have I done?” Lucifer nearly snarled as his gaze briefly went to Yeshua and then turned again toward Yah. Then his voice became soft and petulant with a hurt sound as he continued. “I have served you faithfully Yah and what has Yeshua talked you into?” his gaze slowly turned back toward Yeshua with a snarl on his lips as he glared at Him.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“You have spoken treason to others,” Yeshua accused.

“I have spoken treason?” Lucifer mocked, “Yeshua, what you have done in secretly planning what you call Man is treason against the entire angelic host!”

“That is not so and all the angels know that Yeshua has only given in love to all as I have,” Yah interceded in defense of Yeshua.

“What kind of love is there in reducing the angelic host’s great and worthy service to that of babysitting this new mortal being, this worthless creation, and its sniveling off-springs?” Lucifer complained, “You think you can replace us with this frail thing? You think a few years of mortal life will actually make this creature better than any of us who have been here serving You faithfully for all eternity?”

Lucifer had ended his words in a crescendo. Then the angels with Lucifer also chimed in yelling angry innuendoes at Elohim. Unbelievably, they had become a mob ready to riot. Yeshua shook His head and wiped his eyes as if to clear them as he looked upon a sight He had never believed could happen. No longer just angry, these angels began to show hatred in their eyes and voices.

“My children,” Yah **compassionately** cried out, ***“Do not follow this twisted transgressor.”***

“We are not your children; you have said this new creature called Man will be the children of your family, not us. Not a single one of us will remain important or needed. After all we have done for you, now you have forsaken us for this thing you call Man!” Lucifer shouted out in rage as he slowly began to edge closer toward the thrones of Elohim

“Lucifer,” demanded Yeshua, “Stand down and repent of this madness.”

“Stand down?” Lucifer laughed then he shouted with maddening rage, “I’ll never stand down again to you or Yah Why, when I get through, you’ll both be kneeling before me looking up at me upon my throne!”

As a signal to the others, Lucifer raised his hand with his staff and together he and his angels lunged forward toward the thrones. Even faster, the four great beasts along with Michael and Gabriel formed a line in front of the throne. Yah stood in front of His throne while Yeshua had risen and then stood to the front and center of the platform supporting their thrones as Lucifer’s throng attacked. The four beasts with their huge jaws open and their tongues licked their teeth as they prepared to leap upon the angry mob before the thrones. Then together they met the attack of Lucifer and the rebellious angels. The Twenty-Four Elders also rose to attack Lucifer’s force from the rear while legions of other angelic beings instantly appeared and joined the attack from all sides. There were thunderous explosions that rocked the heavens as the forces met head-on each sending burst of power like lightning bolts at each other. Swords in the hands of angels crashed against the swords of angels who had become their enemies. Each fought face to face as the battle line shifted back and forth.

As Lucifer fought his way past Michael and Gabriel, he suddenly found only Yeshua standing between him and Yah. Yah was standing with His arms raised as He called for the power of the Holy Spirit to strengthen those angels loyal to Him. Lucifer swung his staff with all his might but Yeshua blocked it with His scepter in His right hand and countered by grasping Lucifer by the collar around his neck with His left hand. Lucifer struggled to free himself

The Beginning of the Beginning

as Yeshua pulled him closer and looked him directly in the eye. Lucifer snarled and growled like an angry animal. But suddenly fear flashed in his eyes after he struggled turning his head to the right and left. He saw his forces surrounded and about to be subdued by the angels still loyal to Elohim.

Lucifer shrieked, "Retreat!" He and those angels loyal to him vanished from the throne room.

"Where did they go?" Michael cried out.

"Quick, into the universe, they must have gone to the Earth," Yeshua commanded as He took the lead with the loyal angelic host closely following Him, *"We must stop them."*

A war had begun that quickly went from heaven through the veil into the vast but near empty universe that held only the planet Earth. Yeshua, Michael, and Gabriel lead the angels that were loyal to Elohim against those of Lucifer. Yah remained in heaven with the Twenty-Four Elders in order to determine which angels had remained loyal and which had followed Lucifer. Yah shook His head in sorrow as He discovered fully one-third of the entire angelic host had forsaken Elohim and now followed Lucifer. A greater note of sadness was that most of those who had followed Lucifer were archangels that had held high positions for eternity in the heavenly realm. Only Michael and Gabriel remained of the ten thousand archangels. It was determined that actually very few of the tens of thousands of other lower angels had gone with Lucifer. The loyal two-thirds of the angelic host were soon battling those with Lucifer from one end of the virtually limitless universe to the other. The evil angels twisted and warped some of the physical laws Elohim had set in motion to further increase the chaos that swept the universe. Time within the physical universe reached hundreds of millions of years

as the war would surprisingly end in a truce. Yet it seemed a short span to the beings that inhabit eternity.

“The angels of Lucifer have been beaten back to the vicinity of the Earth and are now gathering about Earth where Lucifer is making his final defense,” Gabriel reported, “They have caused great destruction already upon the Earth and are threatening to totally destroy the entire planet if we continue our war with them.”

“Call him no more, Lucifer,” Yah declared, “He has become an adversary. From now on his name will be Satan and all the angels who have followed him we will no longer call angels but will now call demons.”

Yeshua and Yah had been communicating with each other by thought considering many possible options. After a short span Yeshua sent His agreement with Yah on the best path forward. Returning to the throne of Yah with Gabriel and several other angels, Yeshua reached out to take the scroll from Yah.

“Tell Satan that we wish to call a truce,” Yah stated as Yeshua took the scroll. Gabriel and the angels with him were shocked as they also heard the terms of the truce. “Tell him that he and his angels can remain on and about the confines of Earth as We stop this war with them, if and only if they agree to the terms of the truce. Otherwise, we will not stop until they have been utterly destroyed so that not even a memory of Satan or any who has followed him will exist.”

Yeshua then handed the scroll to Gabriel to take to the front line where Michael and most of the two thirds of the angelic band had Satan and his followers surrounded near planet Earth. When Gabriel appeared, Michael drew back from the standoff. He too had heard

The Beginning of the Beginning

Yah's statement. Although he wanted to crush Satan right then, he did what Yah and Yeshua wanted done and took the scroll from Gabriel. He opened and read it. Unlike the other angels, he then grasped what Elohim had in mind. Then he placed his sword in its sheath while Gabriel did the same. Together they left the angelic band and slowly moved down toward the Earth with a staff flying a white flag. This was a sign that signified that they wished to meet without hostilities. Several demonic angels surrounded them and demanded to know what they wished to talk about. Michael held up the scroll and told them it was to be handed over only to Lucifer.

From deep within the bowels of the Earth, Lucifer flew out of a volcano and rose upward toward Michael and Gabriel. He was not alone but had over a thousand of his demons by his side. He slowly came face to face with them. He smiled as he looked at the demons who had surrounded the two sent from Elohim. However, Michael and Gabriel stood their ground with a look of complete assurance that no force could harm them or take them captive. As Michael extended the scroll, Lucifer snatched it and snarled obscenities as he ripped it open. Then, he began to read its contents. He laughed and muttered to himself as he continued to read. His mind contemplated the battles that had been recently fought and lost by his followers. He slowly began to realize for the first time that he had greatly underestimated the power of Elohim and the angels that remained loyal to Them. Finally, finishing reading the scroll he closed it.

“So, Satan is what they call me now?” he snarled. “Fine, for I will be their adversary and a force against all who support Elohim and oppose me.”

He looked at Michael and Gabriel and the angels of Elohim further out in space that opposed him. He then looked about at the angels that were on his side. How could it be he wondered that all

the archangels that followed him were no longer a match for the lower angels that had remained with Elohim? Would the Great Elohim actually call his bluff and chance the total destruction of Earth? And could Elohim actually destroy angels as well as himself, the greatest most powerful being ever created?

Suddenly, a plan began to form in his subconscious mind and slowly the details of it came to the forefront. He quickly read again the exact details of the conditions of the truce. Just as quickly, he grasped a devious plan that he felt sure that Elohim had not considered. He thought, 'while it says I must not destroy the Earth and I must appear before Elohim when He summons me, the details are not entirely specific. There are loopholes that I can take advantage that not even Elohim realizes. Why not lay low and at the right time get Elohim's precious creation, 'man', (even the name left a bad taste in his mouth), to also turn against them? Yes, that would be the greatest triumph imaginable, he laughed within himself. Turn their new Elohim's into Elohim's enemies as well. That just may be the final piece of the puzzle to provide the strength I need to overpower Elohim and take the throne of power over all of heaven from Yah and Yeshua.

"Yes, I accept the terms," he finally responded making his mark on the scroll and throwing it back at Michael whose hand moved like lightning to catch it before it struck him in the face. Gabriel started to draw his sword but Michael held up his other hand in front of him signaling for him not to draw it. Together they backed away from Satan. Michael kept his attention toward Satan while Gabriel turned to face the demons surrounding them. Satan laughed and signaled for his followers to back off and let the two emissaries of Elohim depart peacefully.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Then Satan spun around as he commanded his followers to come with him toward the surface of the planet. While he did not lift his hand in causing complete and total destruction, he exercised what he thought was a loophole. He sent thousands of his demons to descend upon the Earth. Together, they hit the Earth like an asteroid with an incredible force sending smoke and ash into the air. Then he exercised another loophole and dispatched the thousands of fallen angels to the far corners of the Earth where they pushed and pulled with all their might against the continental plates. This wreaked havoc and caused volcanic eruptions, tidal waves, and earthquakes on the surface of the Earth. Huge sections of land turned over sandwiching what remained of the vegetation and creatures and then burying it deep in the Earth. Internal waters gushed out creating massive tidal waves that swept around the entire Earth, finally smashing together. The seas continued to rise until the landmasses of the entire Earth were covered by the deep water that boiled from the heat of the magma that flowed from the bowels of the planet, this caused a heavy mist that mixed with the ash clouds surrounding the Earth totally blotting out all light that had been given to the planet from Elohim.

Far above the smoldering ruins of the Earth, Michael, Gabriel, and the angelic host shook their heads in sadness. There were tears in most of their eyes as they remembered the beauty of Earth when Yeshua had spoken it into existence. Slowly they left the Earth and passing through the veil returned to the third heaven of Elohim's [God's] abode.

Many could not help but look back upon a smoldering void and saw enormous waves lashed about reflecting the torment that had raged in the angels who had rebelled and become demons. Then there was darkness as Elohim ceased from continuing to give His light to the planet. The demons on the surface were shocked as it

suddenly became pitch-black. They all descended down into the caverns deep in the Earth where in the glow of molten lava they gathered near their leader, Satan to brood and begin planning for a time they would renew the war and get back what they had lost. In heavenly terms, the war and the beginning stages of the truce had not seemed very long in duration; however, in Earth time hundreds of millions of years had elapsed. During this time, the most beautiful angelic being ever created began to transform outside as he had become inside into a hideous serpentine dragon with wings and scales on his skin and horns on his head.

.....

Yah and Yeshua were sitting on their thrones as the darkness began to cover the Earth. They had seen that the destruction of the surface reached miles deep into the Earth. After a period of silence. Yah spoke.

“So, Satan really thinks he is getting away with something,” Yah commented. *“He does not even realize that all of his ‘plans’ are known by Us.”*

“Yes, how much angrier do you think he would be if he knew his followers were doing exactly what We wanted done to the Earth?” Yeshua replied.

“He simply does not realize it but he actually can’t think that far in advance. Just like most other creatures we have created; he lives in the moment. He will deal with things as they happen having little awareness of the future. We will let the Earth cool some more and then when We are ready; We will renew its face and move ahead with Project Man,” Yah mused.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“I am still a little concerned about the part of Satan’s plan that involves attempting to corrupt man as he has done to the fallen angels. How much freedom can we safely give to Satan to influence mankind?” Yeshua asked.

“We can allow him as much freedom as needed to try the man to prove if he will be loyal to us no matter what happens,” Yah responded. *“Whatever went wrong with Satan and those demonic angels that followed him, I want to be absolutely sure that nothing like it ever happens to men after they have been changed to Our children, immortal like us.”*

“I can see that it will not be easy for man, but We will also be there in Spirit to guide and help him make the right choices and develop the nature We have rather than that of Satan,” Yeshua said with total conviction. *“As I declared from the beginning of Our plans for man, I reaffirm. I will do anything to ensure that man overcomes every temptation of Satan and weakness of being mortal, so that many new sons can be born to Elohim.”*

Yah lowered and very slowly shook His head as He again thought, *‘The price that might be required is too terrible to imagine. But, for now let Us think only of what must be done in order to create man.’* Yah glanced over at Yeshua beside Him. He then turned His head away as tears formed in His eyes. He closed His eyes with a sigh and then vanished.

Yeshua had been lost in thought when He saw or rather felt Yah disappear. His thoughts quickly returned to the plans for establishing the man on Earth. Yes, He said in His thoughts to Himself, there is a lot of work that must be done to get the Earth ready for the next phase.

Part Three: The Creation Week

Chapter 16

The Creation Week on Earth

[The image I was given while I slept of the desolate condition of the earth was so tragic, I felt tears in my eyes overflowing and rolling down my face into my right ear. But, the scenes of Elohim virtually rolling up His sleeves to work ‘hands on’ to recreate the earth was incredible to behold and gave me comfort.]

Vast and violent waters swept across the empty lifeless void that Earth had become at the end of the angelic war caused by Satan’s rebellion. The Earth seemed to linger, alone, dark, and forgotten for hundreds of millions of years in Earth time and somehow it oddly began to feel like a very long time for the angels in the heavens. Some began to wonder if the Earth was doomed to face the rest of eternity as a desolate wasteland. The destruction on the surface was so severe that no life could be sustained in the polluted waters that covered it. After eons had passed, the angels who traveled throughout the empty void of the universe ensuring that Satan and the demons kept the terms of the truce suddenly began to notice that the Holy Spirit was hovering above the waters that covered the Earth. While seemingly lost in deep thought His presence created a light but it did not penetrate below the surface of the Earth.

Finally, as Yah and Yeshua sat on Their thrones, Yah announced to Yeshua that He thought it was time for Earth to be renewed. He and Yeshua had been planning every detail during the long space of time since the angelic wars. An assembly was called in the throne room, the entire angelic host was given an overview, and time schedule of what was to take place. Many angels were

shocked by the implementation time schedule, which seemed unattainable. Could Elohim do the impossible, they wondered?

Previous efforts to develop vegetation on Earth covered a span of time involving millions of Earth years. Now, Yeshua announced that in just six Earth days the amazing re-creation would include not only living creatures on earth but also a near infinite number of celestial bodies would be created throughout the universe in a matter of days. The angels knew that entire species of plants, animals, and insects could not self-sustain its life without an intricate balance and dependence on other elements of creation, the task of completing this action over the entire Earth seemed far beyond the scope of anything they had ever witnessed or imagined. The experiments they had taken part in using the model of the earth helped them understand the enormity of the tasks they would perform working with Yah, Yeshua, and the Holy Spirit working together as Elohim.

The angelic host then watched in wonder at the power of their Elohim's voice thundered and power that looked like immense lightning bolts caused the entire Earth to convulse as it was being reshaped by Their word. The power of light from Elohim burst through the mist to the surface of the Earth and then with the swipe of Yeshua's hand the Earth began to spin. On the side where Yah appeared the light shown but on the other side it was dark. As the Earth finished revolving half way around, the angels noted the light ending and then as the rotation completed a full turn and the light returned. Yeshua announced, "*The evening and the morning now completes the first day as the second day begins.*"

In the caverns, deep within the earth where Satan's abode was, he and his demonic band of fallen angels cringed as some screamed out, "It's over, we are all going to die." Satan ordered them to shut

The Beginning of the Beginning

up and then sent some demons to see what was happening on the surface without being seen.

By the end of the second day, Elohim had separated the waters between those that would flow on and below the land and that which would form as clouds above the land. As the clouds swept around Yeshua, He again saw that another revolution had been completed and He shouted to the angels, *“that is day number two; the best is still to come.”* On the third day, Yah sent his power and with the angels working on the edges separated the waters on the Earth into Oceans. When this was completed, the land forming continents appeared and they began to dry. Hardly pausing Yeshua rose above the land and He saw the dormant seeds of plant life from when the Earth was first created just below the surface of the land. Then He commanded the Earth to bring forth grasses, herbs, and trees from certain seeds that would be compatible with the wild life He would soon bring forth. It was truly miraculous to see the Earth become almost instantaneous green as grasses, herb plants, and trees sprung up and began to spread everywhere. The trees grew amazing fast reaching thirty, then one hundred, and then some reached several hundred feet into the air above the forests. In just twenty-four hours as the third day was ended, most of the land was covered with plants. As he watched the completion of another rotation of the Earth, he breathed out with a sigh, *“That completes day three. This is all very good. We are halfway done, My friends, let us not rest until we finish.”*

On the fourth day, Yah threw a ball of energy into the universe and from it; galaxies with solar systems were formed surrounding the Earth and then they all began to move away¹². He then turned to the Earth. He pointed His finger to an exact location 93,000,000 miles away from the earth and as He shot a bolt of energy, He said

“Let there be light” and instantly a large bright star formed, which He called the sun. Then about 250, 000 miles away from the Earth, He pointed and shot a much smaller burst of energy that formed into a smaller celestial body called a moon, about one-fourth the size of Earth. With the sweep of one hand against the moon, it began to orbit around the Earth. His hands could attract and hold any of the celestial bodies and move them wherever He desired. He reached out with this force toward the sun with one hand and with His other hand; He reached out to the Earth. Then He began moving the Earth in a steady orbit around the sun. He could feel the warmth of the sun as its energy provided not only warmth to the Earth but would provide light during the daylight portion of each day. He looked over His shoulder and saw the moon come out from behind the Earth. It reflected the light of the sun but the brilliant reflection could only be seen clearly during the night portion of each day as the brightness of the sun hide most of it during the day portion.

As Yeshua gazed up into the universe, He saw the little sparkling lights that shine from the innumerable stars of the heavens also provided some light during each night. In rapid secession, using His energy He formed and then sent into orbit, other planets with moons of their own began to circle the sun. Now, Yeshua thought, the sun and moon will be used to divide time into smaller segments. He could not help from smiling. He loved light and even when He had to go into the darkness; His power lighted the way so He could see everything. He noticed Michael and Gabriel standing beside Him and He told them, *“See that little island in the middle of that vast ocean? I have watched the Earth turn and each time I see that island, another day has been completed. My friends, day four is done. We have done another good day’s work.”*

It was now the fifth day as the fourth had just finished. Without any hesitation, Elohim began to created creatures that would dwell

The Beginning of the Beginning

in the waters and creatures that would fly above the surface of the Earth. Their power formed the creatures and They quickly handed the creatures to angels who were standing in line to take and place them where they were supposed to be by the plans they had made. In a matter of hours, the waters were full of sea creatures. The deep oceans had gigantic creatures and the waters of lakes, rivers and streams were teeming with fish and smaller creatures called microbes. Some were so small millions could be held in a single drop of water. Across the heavens flew flocks of birds of every color and size. It seemed like angels carrying creatures would bump into each other as the sky and waters were full of them. Yet, no collisions occurred as each one completed their assignment with precision. Yeshua again smiled as He heard the sounds of angels who for the first time ever experienced a feeling of being tired. *“That completes the fifth day. Take a deep breath, My friends, we are almost done.”*

As the sixth day began, Elohim began to create all the living creatures that would inhabit the land. Large and small pairs of these creatures were created and then placed across the terrain of the Earth. In time, these would multiply and stake their claim to habitations they would protect from other species that would try to take their food sources and shelter. There were animals with fur that went on four legs. There were reptilian creatures, some of immense size while others were the size of modern-day chickens. Then there were insects too numerous to imagine that began to fulfill their part in balancing the ecological systems of the Earth. The entire Earth became a place where moving living creatures roamed, fed, reproduced, and lived according to the purpose of their creation.

Each was guided by an instinct created just for them that was different from other species. Yet, there was one distinct difference from the original model the angels had worked on involving particularly the reptilian creatures. They and all other animals ate

only of the grasses, seeds, and fruits of plant life. None ate the flesh of other animals living, dying, or dead. Some of the plant life created only two days earlier could not have continued to thrive another day without specific creatures interacting with them. The sounds of buzzing, chirping, howling, and bellowing filled the environs around the Earth.

In all these creations, Elohim could have spoken and by the power of the Holy Spirit, they would have become reality. Yet, in wisdom and benevolence, They had again shared this great undertaking with the angels who had remained loyal. The angelic beings working along with Yeshua around the sphere of Earth saw flashes of Yah appearing and just as quickly disappearing working right along with them. What they did not realize was the Yah moved so fast, even an angelic being could not see Him. All the angels were continually awestruck of both Yeshua and Yah as They seemed to appear virtually everywhere at the same time. They all had literally rolled up their sleeves and pitched in to bring it all into existence. The angelic beings worked to bring materials to Yeshua and help shape them but only Elohim could give each organism a spark of life, its breath, and then sustain it.

Everything was so intricately balanced that it seemed like not a single second could be spared in bringing each life form into a thriving existence at its proper time and place. From the second day, onward the sun had risen on the horizon beginning each new day and together they labored beyond its setting barely finishing one day's work before the sun rose again to start the next day. There was a set of tasks each day that nearly reached infinity, a number that only Elohim could comprehend and see as each element was properly completed. As each full day ended just before the sun began to rise to begin another day, a shout of joy, acclaim, and praise from the

The Beginning of the Beginning

angelic host resounded into the vast universe as their master Elohim proclaimed, “*It is very good.*”

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 17

The Creation of Adam

[Just needed to tell you that from the creation of Adam and Eve to the time they are driven from the Garden, what I dreamed was especially real and easily guided my writing of this part of the story. I laughed and enjoyed watching what Adam and Eve did. I felt the anguish that Adam felt as he chose to eat the forbidden fruit and to eventually die along with the love of his life, Eve.]

As the sun reached its zenith on the sixth day, the final phase was begun. A garden had been created just east of a place called Eden. Its location was in what would be called Mesopotamia between the Tigress and Euphrates Rivers. The garden was lush with a spectacular blend of colorful and sweet-smelling trees, plants, flowers, and open grassy meadows and with flowing springs of water.

All the creatures of Earth had been made and placed in its habitat except for one. The angelic band could only stand back and watch as Elohim would complete this last living creature. On a bank next to a stream, Yah watched as Yeshua scooped up several handfuls of dirt and red clay from the ground and with water from the stream carefully and lovingly began to shape the form of man. He first built a skeletal frame about the same height as His. Then He shaped and placed internal organs within it. He made various tube-like shapes, some long and some thinner than the hair on His head. Some tubes were connected to various organs and some ran throughout the entire body from head to toes that would carry electrical impulses to move muscles.

His most complex task was making the organ He called a brain, which He placed inside the skull of the head. This organ was intricately connected through the spinal cord to everything else in the entire body. A lump of clay barely larger than the fist of His right hand was used to form a powerful four-chambered muscle that would pump life-sustaining blood throughout the body. With everything in place, he now attached an intricate system of muscles to move all parts of the skeletal frame. He spat upon some dirt in his hands and rolled it about forming two round shaped balls that he placed into sockets below the forehead of the skull. Then he took a large amount of dirt again mixing it with some water and began to spread it very thin upon a smooth flat rock. This became skin as he wrapped it about the body completely covering all of it. There were thin threads protruded from much of the skin that He called hair. Some places had very thick course hair such as upon its head and face. Down to the fingernails and fine grooves on each finger, it was an exact physical reproduction of the form of Elohim.

Yeshua finally moved His hands over the body from the top of its head to the tips of its toes as some portions of the body such as the bones became very hard, other portions such as the skin and internal veins and arteries were soft and flexible and finally other tissue such as muscles were firm and strong. Only an angelic being could follow the movements of Yeshua. If any mortal had been there watching, it would have been a total blur as it would seem like the finish was completed almost before the beginning.

Yah looked at Yeshua and then His own reflection in the stream. Then He looked at the man and exclaimed in excitement, “*He looks just like us!*”

“*Just like we planned,*” Yeshua replied with a grin on His face, “*Ready for the final step?*”

The Beginning of the Beginning

Yah nodded and together with the Holy Spirit, they blew air into the man's nostrils filling his lungs. At the same time Yeshua placed His right hand on the man's forehead and His fingertips transcended physical matter reaching through the skull to create an invisible spirit essence that became part of the man's brain. At the same time, Yah's right hand wrapped around the man's heart and began to squeeze it to begin its beat, which would continue for the entire span of its human life. Yah vanished as Yeshua held the man cradled in His arms like one would hold a child.

The man became a living soul as his whole body at first convulsed as if responding to an electric shock and then his heart began its own rhythmic beat. He exhaled and automatically took another gasp of air as the entire body began its miraculous life sustaining processes. His body then relaxed as his eyes began to twitch. Soon he squinted as he began to open his eyes and blinked as the sun's brightness at first seemed to startle him. Slowly his eyes began to focus. The first thing he saw were the eyes of his creator whose arms cradled him. There was absolutely no fear in his eyes as a smile formed naturally on his face. Yeshua could sense the wonder the man felt as He sat him up on his own. The man began to look about and the smile changed to a puzzled look.

Yeshua stood up and looked down at him as he sat there. The man stopped looking about and then slowly raised his head and eyes to look up at Yeshua. Yeshua reached down, took the man's arms, and slowly pulled him up to stand on his legs. The man awkwardly shifted his weight from one leg then to the other and finally he balanced on both feet as he stood side by side with his creator. Yeshua put the left arm of the man over His shoulder and then wrapped His right arm around behind him to steady him. Yeshua then moved his left leg forward and guided the man in moving his

left leg to take a step. The man watching Yeshua's every move began to anticipate moving each leg and soon they were walking together with little support from Yeshua.

As the man became steadier and surer of himself, Yeshua completely removed his right arm from around His shoulder and held the man's left arm with His right hand. After walking a little way, and seeing the man was doing well in keeping his balance, He slowly let go of his right hand allowing the man to walk beside Him on his own. Suddenly the man realized that he was walking on his own and stumbled and fell to the ground. He looked up and then took Yeshua's right hand that was extended to him. Yeshua lifted him up as if he were a small child. Once he was standing upright, Yeshua began taking steps away from him. The man was unsure of himself, but took a step toward Yeshua. Yeshua smiled at him and motioned for him to follow Him. The man took another unsteady step but kept on walking toward Yeshua. There was something in Yeshua's smile and nod that encouraged him to keep on trying. Soon he was walking with confidence.

Then Yeshua began to increase His pace and before long, they were both running across a meadow. The man watched as Yeshua leaped over a small brook and he did the same. Next, Yeshua jumped over a small bush and when the man tried, his foot caught the top, and he landed and rolled on the grass. As he began to get back up, he saw Yeshua bent over with His hands on His knees both smiling and making a wonderful sound. A sense of joy and happiness filled his mind and he too began to smile and to make the sound of laughter like that of his creator.

Yeshua was somewhat amazed at the speed the man picked up things he was being taught. He quickly understood the spoken word for things they saw and what they did. At first, the man heard

The Beginning of the Beginning

Yeshua's words with not only his ears but also even in his mind. He discovered that he could answer and speak with thoughts in his mind. In time, Yeshua stopped responding to the man's thoughts to force him to put his thoughts into spoken words as well. Together they wandered about the garden stopping to examine each new plant and living creature that crossed their path. The man was asked to name them and after a moment of thought each time, he came up with a name that would be used for all time. The man suddenly stopped and turned to Yeshua and placed his hand on Yeshua's shoulder and said, "What called?"

Yeshua smiled and said, "*I am Yeshua Elohim.* You may call me, Yeshua."

Stopping at a stream, the man watched as Yeshua dropped down on his knees and then reached down to scoop up water in his hands and then drink the water savoring its clean fresh taste. After watching Him, the man also knelt by the stream and began reaching into the water trying to bring it to his lips to drink. He became frustrated as the water leaked between his fingers and so he lay prostrate upon the ground and dropped his face down to touch the water supported by his arms and began sucking water into his mouth.

He extended too far over the stream and his hands slipped, dropping his entire head into the water with a splash. Quickly, he pushed himself back onto the bank, coughing and spitting out some water that choked him a little. Then he made a burping sound as air came out his mouth from his stomach. This surprised him and as Yeshua laughed he too laughed. Quickly, he mastered the activity of drinking water and satisfied his thirst and wiped his dripping mouth with his arm. He returned the smile he saw on Yeshua, his teacher's face. Then remembering what he had seen just before he

dropped his face to the water. He again looked into the water and stared at his reflection.

“What? Who?” the man asked pointing to the image.

“*That is, you,*” Yeshua responded.

“Name?” he asked.

Yeshua told him, “*I am Elohim. Creator of all you see. I come from a place beyond the heavens above,*” Yeshua said as He pointed up toward the sky. Then He reached down and picked up a handful of dirt and said, “*You are a man that I have created from material just like this dirt in my hand.*”

The man looked at the dirt and took some in his own hands and rubbed it about. After thinking a few minutes, he answered, “You say, me made of red Earth dirt. My name, me called Adam. You, Yeshua, I Adam.”

Yeshua smiled and gave him a friendly slap on the back. Adam then gave Yeshua what he thought was also a friendly slap on the back as well.

The man is remarkably strong, Yeshua considered. What Adam thought was a gentle slap on the back would have knocked the breath out of most creatures. Yeshua would have to do some training in physical behavior so that the man would not accidentally harm any of the creatures in the garden.

Yeshua stopped by a tree and pulled a piece of fruit from it. He began to eat it. Adam also took a piece of fruit. He held it to his nose and smelled it and then squeezed it. It turned to mush in his

The Beginning of the Beginning

strong hand and its juice and pulp extruded through his fingers. He licked his fingers and took another piece of fruit this time not squeezing it so tightly and took a bite out of it. His expression was funny to look at and Yeshua had to stop Himself from laughing aloud. The man tried to smile and laugh at the same time as he was trying to eat the fruit that he was thoroughly enjoying. It kept gushing out from his lips and ran down his chin and onto his chest.

“Good, good,” he kept repeating as he consumed several of the fruit. Finally, he did not want anymore.

“*Come with me,*” Yeshua told him. They went back to the stream and Yeshua stepped out into the water until he was waist deep. He then began to splash water on his face and hair. Adam jumped into the water also and began to splash about having fun doing so until he slipped and went completely under the water. Yeshua reached over, grabbed the man by his hair, and pulled his head up out of the water. Adam was gasping and choking as he coughed water from his lungs.

“*Adam,*” Yeshua instructed as he held the man up by his arms, “*stop breathing when you put your head under the water.*” Then he pointed to the sky as he breathed in expanding the lungs of his chest. “*You breathe air.*” Then he pointed to the water and sipped some from his cupped hand and pointed to his belly. “*You drink water and you eat food. This goes to your stomach.*”

Adam immediately grasped what he was told. “Air, breath. Water, no breath, hurt. Air no drink, no eat. Water drink, food eat. Good, no hurt.”

They splashed around for a while and Adam slipped again and went under the water but when he came back up, he smiled and said, “Water, no breath, no hurt.”

Time seemed to pass more slowly as the man grew more in poise and moved about with grace as his teacher taught him. In fact, as the angels watched the speed of these events actually seemed to almost become a blur and both Creator and man moved at increasing speeds. There were so many things to see and to discover their workings that it was hard for him to stop for a minute or settle down to rest. A dark cloud passed overhead and for the first time Adam saw that his teacher’s skin actually glowed. He wondered at the glow of the body of his master and teacher. He would look at him and then at himself. At first, he tried rubbing his hands on his body, waving his arms and legs, and even holding his breath trying to make himself glow. At last, he realized that no matter what he did, he would not glow like his teacher.

They were no longer finding new animals or plants to examine and for Adam to name. Adam was becoming a little restless. As they were walking along a stream, He pointed to a deer with a large rack of antlers standing beside another deer with no horns.

“Deer’s. Buck, male. Doe, female.” He said. Then he continued on talking to himself, “Buck, doe, buck, doe...” A puzzled look was on his face. When they passed another stream, he stopped. He did not take a drink but just sat looking at his reflection. He would occasionally look up as animals passed by or stopped nearby to drink from the stream. Then it looked like a new idea had come to his mind and he jumped up and started to run.

“Adam,” Yeshua called as He ran after him, “*What’s the matter? Where are you going?*”

The Beginning of the Beginning

The man just ran and ran looking everywhere. The man was able to run mile after mile without showing any sign of becoming tired. Finally, he stopped and sat down. He looked sad and disappointed. As Yeshua sat down beside him, he looked into Yeshua's eyes with a look that said more than his words could express. Tears were beginning to well up in his eyes and then began running down his cheek. The man was crying.

"Adam, man, only Adam. Only man...alone...where? Where? Need? Must find? How find?" Tears continued to form in his eyes as he shook his head and continued to ramble trying to find words for the strange lonely feeling, he had inside which had become unbearable.

"I understand what you are feeling, Adam. I now know what you were seeking and needing. You see, no one should ever be alone," Yeshua told him.

"I am man, I alone. You are Yeshua, Elohim, Creator, are you alone?" Adam pondered as he asked.

"No Adam, I am not alone. You see me in a form very much like your own. I am one with two others who are also Elohim; One is named Yah, Elohim Almighty. The second is One who does not appear in a shape like Yah and I called the Holy Spirit. Together, the three of Us are Elohim; We are One, one in purpose and one to the extent that no human mind could ever comprehend our Oneness. To see one of us is to see the other. However, in our glorified state, you could not look upon us as our power and glory would consume your mortal flesh leaving only ashes upon the ground. For eternity, we have lived and created creatures in a spirit realm that you cannot see or enter while you are a flesh and blood human being. Together,

Yah and I with the Holy Spirit planned and created the Earth, this ground beneath your feet, and all that abides thereon and in the seas. We have created the clouds and sky above and beyond there is a universe so vast you can only see tiny points of light when the sky is dark after the sun sets on the western horizon. My normal countenance is so powerful and bright no physical creature including you could look upon me and not be instantly burned to ash. However, I have made myself appear in a form that you can safely look upon being human,” Yeshua told the man.

“Where is Yah? Where is the Holy Spirit? Can I see Them also?” Adam asked.

“In time, you will see Yah. However, to see me, you have seen Him. You will also see the form of the Holy Spirit. More importantly, at the right time, the Holy Spirit will come and a part of Him will abide within you. However, for now, suffice it to accept what I say and learn from me. I have waited until you discovered your need to be with another like yourself. I am now going to make another human being very much like you. You will find in her a completion of yourself and experience as far as humanly possible what it is like to be one with another as Elohim has experienced for all eternity. As I have said, Ours has been a kind of oneness that no others have ever experienced. You and your mate will bond in a way that will help you to be one in mind, body, and spirit, in essence a oneness like Us as is humanly possible. This bond is essential for you to have and to maintain for your entire life in order for you both to have joy, happiness, and peace as long as you both shall live,” Yeshua continued to tell the man of the many things he would share with a companion who would become one with him. He had many questions and concerns as Yeshua told him incredible things but finally Yeshua stopped.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Do not worry, Adam, all your questions will be answered in due time. It is time for you to sleep for a while. When you awake your longings will be satisfied,” Yeshua consoled him. It was time for His final creation of the sixth day.

Chapter 18

The Creation of Eve

A deep sleep came over Adam. As he had done just a very few hours before, Yeshua reached His hands into the Earth drawing out substances that he could turn into whatever his mind dictated. As He formed a new human being, He reached into the side of the man's body and removed a rib. The opening in the man was closed and instantly healed. Yeshua had purposely left only a scar on the skin to mark the spot where the rib was removed. He continued to place the bones, organs, and other tissue made from dirt about the rib and began shaping and changing its composition. More dirt was transformed into human tissue and added as he continued as a master artist sculpting a great masterpiece. When finished just as He had done to Adam, He placed a spirit essence in the brain and then breathed into the form that He held in his arms. He felt the heart beat; once, twice, and then quickly continued into a rhythm that would be repeated for life. The air that entered the lungs was exhaled and new air brought in as the lungs began to function. Throughout the body, life giving and sustaining blood flowed to every part. The muscles began to flex and the body moved.

The eyes of the woman opened to look into the face of her creator. They were full of wonder. A smile came to her face reflecting that which she saw. Yeshua began communicating with her mind quickly answering the questions that formed without words in her mind. As she began to understand words, Yeshua began to talk with her and she too began using words to express her thoughts to Him. Yeshua rose and lifted her to her feet. He began to teach her to walk just as He had Adam. The woman never took her eyes off of Yeshua and He had to tell her to look where she was stepping

and at what was around her. She mastered walking much quicker than Adam had as well as other basic things He first taught Adam. As they walked about the meadow beside a stream, they stopped to drink its water. The new creation gazed at her reflection and then looked down and then ran her hands over her body. Then she began to look about as if trying to find something that was missing, something she needed. Then her eyes focused on the body of the man lying on the grass near the stream not far from them.

At this time, the man awoke. He stretched and rolled over and looked toward his master as he heard His voice talking. His eyes and his mouth opened widely in total amazement as he saw what was standing beside his master. He started to rise up and then looked down feeling something strange in his body. He saw a scar on his side that had not been there before. He again looked with shock at something he knew he had been looking for but unable to find. Standing beside Yeshua this new creation looked at the man and then back at Yeshua. Adam quickly jumped to his feet and began to walk closer to look at this new creature. There was a look of awe and curiosity in both their eyes as they stood looking at each other.

Then Yeshua took one of their hands in each of His and then put both their hands together. As He held both of their hands between His, He looked into the man's eyes and then into the woman's eyes and smiled.

"Man," He said to Adam. Then He said to the woman, *"Woman."* Then He said to them both. *"Two?"* Then shook His head. *"No longer two, together you are to be one. Always, be one. Man, woman, together as one."* As they turned their eyes from Him and toward each other, He removed His hands and stepped back disappearing from their sight.

The Beginning of the Beginning

They did not even notice that He was no longer beside them. Adam could not take his eyes off her. He looked up from her eyes and saw silky black hair flowing down cascading over her body nearly to her waist. He looked down at her body and at first, he thought it was almost like looking at a slightly smaller version of what he had seen of himself in the reflection of water but then he began to notice some differences. His hands very slowly began to touch the curves of her body as his mind tried to comprehend the incredible ecstatic sensations he was feeling. He felt a tingle in his side where the rib had been removed and he felt like he needed her close beside him to fill the void. She too was inquisitively touching his body feeling his strong shoulders and arms with a look of wonder and enjoyment. His hair was flaming red and his taller body bulged with muscles filling out his strong frame. Yet he was very much like her in form. Adam knew that she was his kind and he would never feel lonely again.

Her emotions gave her a feeling of a need or yearning for something and as she drew closer to him these feelings were replaced with those that felt warm and soothing. Together they put their arms about each other and pulled each other ever closer. As he felt her body touching his, he too felt a pleasant feeling that exceeded anything he had ever experienced in his short life. Their bodies slowly went down to their knees and then they lay together side by side. They embraced, grasping each other with their arms and legs intertwined, feeling the overpowering need to try to find some way to get even closer as they rolled about on the grass. Then a special part of Adam entered a special part of the woman and they became as one flesh, one body, whole, completely joined face to face united in a way that no other living creatures would ever experience. This union went beyond their physical flesh and blood, as they became one in mind and spirit, in that moment they existed as one being not two, forever inseparable. This was physically as close as any human

being could experience the oneness of Elohim. The ecstasy they experienced in each other's embrace was beyond any words they would ever come to know. After their passions were fully satisfied, they stared into the heavens as the sun dropped below the horizon. They saw an uncountable number of sparkling pinpoints of light across the night sky. It was beautiful and they soon fell asleep in each other's embrace. As they slept, the Creator looked at all His handiwork and smiled. The physical creation was complete. Just as the sun was about to rise, day number six ended.

And, Elohim saw that it was very good...

Chapter 19

The Creation of the Sabbath

At the throne of Elohim, Yahweh received the reports of the angelic host that was responsible for monitoring every aspect of the creation. While these things went on beyond the speed of light outside of time itself the Earth slowly turned and the sun began to rise on the seventh day as They were satisfied that all was as it should be.

Yeshua turned to Yahweh and spoke, *“I think it would be good to rest today and celebrate our accomplishments these past six days. Our labors have been fruitful and we have performed all we set our hands to do.”*

Yahweh replied, *“Great idea. Be sure to inform the man and woman. After the Earth completes six revolutions, when they awake on the seventh day, they should spend it restfully, in contemplation of what you teach them about us and why they were created. It should be a day of joy, thanksgiving, a day of celebrating creation and reminding them that we are their Elohim and they are our children.”*

Thus, began what was to be known as a weekly seven-day cycle that man would observe until the end of time. Initially, each day was known by its number but the seventh day had a special name: the Sabbath. It was not until several thousand years had passed before men gave other names to the days of the week. Some very foolish and evil men would even try to get the world to change the cycle and start the week on the second day and end on the first day. Some toyed with having an eight-day cycle, while others tried to eliminate weekly cycles entirely. This was attempted by evil men who did

not want to be reminded of the Creation Week nor the Creator who made all things and demanded righteous behavior.

Other than leaving a number of angels to stand guard, the rest of the angelic band that had remained loyal to Elohim were summoned to the throne room. They were instructed to rest and enjoy themselves as the Earth spun on its axis for twenty-four hours. Some strode the beautiful gardens; some walked about the temple, while others walked down streets of gold and went into the immense mansions that were beginning to be built. The angels wondered who would inhabit these incredible palaces. None of the angels seemed to know for sure. This was part of a plan that Elohim was developing. When the time was right, they would be told.

Part Four: The Garden of Eden

Chapter 20

Satan's Plans His Revenge

Looking back seven days at what Satan and his demons experienced we would have seen and heard the following. The Earth around Satan began to shake abnormally. He sensed something was happening on the surface of the Earth. Quickly, he dispatched several of his angels now called demons to see what was happening. It was not long before they returned.

“Master,” one demon began to tell him, “The waters that covered the planet’s surface have begun to separate and large bodies of land are appearing.”

“We tried to stay just under the surface of the water while looking about and had to keep moving as the waters receded,” a second demon reported.

“I think Elohim is up to something,” a third demon observed.

“Oh really,” Satan chided. He was beginning to think he was surrounded by a bunch of idiots. How was it possible that the archangels who followed him had become such imbeciles?

He knew that the time would eventually come when Elohim would begin to prepare the Earth for his precious creation, Man. He spit as he thought the word. No longer surprised when there was a hiss and his spit would evaporate when it hit the enormously hot surface surrounding him. He had not been idle since being exiled to Earth. He had thought of many different ways to extract his revenge.

“Hah,” he said aloud as hatred-filled spit kept dripping down from his mouth hissing on the floor, “I would have to be tied down by them in chains from head to toe in order for them to stop me. I have simply lost a battle, BUT, not the war!”

As each Earth day was completed, Satan and many of his demons secretly watched Elohim and the angels who had remain loyal to Elohim busy at work around the entire sphere of the Earth. When back within the bowels of the planet Satan would criticize each detail, and tell his sycophants how he would have done better. The demons all agreed and each tried to be more agreeable than the next. In his ego, Satan just absorbed it, rather than realize what a sham it truly was.

When man was created on the sixth day, Satan was somewhat perplexed. This creature would be almost as difficult to deal with as Yeshua. Then when the woman was created, he saw the opportunity he had hoped for. He would get to the man through the woman. He watched as the man taught the woman what Yeshua taught him. He began to notice that she wanted to find out some things on her own. How interesting, he thought.

Chapter 21

Adam and Eve Learn About Obedience to Elohim

Yeshua appeared to the man and woman as they awoke still in each other's arms on the seventh day. They smiled at their Creator and then sat up as they heard a sound that caused their hearts to beat faster and nearly overwhelmed them with joyful feelings.

“It's the angels singing and making sounds we call music on devices called instruments that I will teach you about,” Yeshua began telling them. *“Today is a very special day. This is the seventh day since we began the re-creation of Earth to provide you with a home. Every seventh day is to be a special day in which you should remember how you were created and remember your Creator and what I have taught you. It is a time to relax and listen to me as I still have much more to teach you.”*

“What do you mean by: ‘re-creation’?” Adam asked.

“When this planet was first formed, it was covered with vegetation that was compressed over a very long time to form substances that mankind will need many years from now to provide energy,” Yeshua explained.

“What is energy?” Adam asked.

“Feel the heat from the sun on your body?” Yeshua said as Adam looked up at the sun and then quickly at his left arm that was not shaded by the tree they were sitting under.

“Where the sunlight shows on my arm is warmer than other parts of my skin in the shade of the tree,” Adam remarked.

“That heat is energy,” Yeshua continued. “One of these days, I will teach you more about energy. The earth was changed from what it was like when first created. Six days ago, Yah, the Holy Spirit, and I began to reshape and make the earth a place for you and others to live and thrive on. We made a universe full of celestial bodies for mankind to explore with us as well. Remember all the twinkling lights you saw last night just before you went to sleep?”

“Yes, it was awesome. How much more is there to learn?” asked the woman whom Adam had decided to call Eve, as she would be the mother of all mankind.

“Every day of your life there will be things to learn and things to remember,” replied Yeshua.

“Will you teach us all things?” Adam asked.

“I will teach you everything that is good for you to know. From me only, you will learn what is right and what is wrong,” Yeshua answered.

“What do you mean, wrong?” Eve asked with a puzzled look on her face.

*“If I ask you to do something and you do not do it that is **wrong**. If I ask you not to do something and you go ahead and do it anyway, that is **wrong**,”* Yeshua instructed.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Why would we ever want to disobey you?” Adam quickly responded. “You give us everything that is good and you gave us life.”

“And each other,” the woman added.

“*Always remember what each of you has just said,*” Yeshua said smiling and placing a hand on each of their shoulders looking into the man’s eyes and then the woman’s eyes. He could hear their thoughts. Adam’s thoughts were filled with continued wonder and excitement as he remembered things he had done with his Teacher and Creator. Eve’s thoughts were also full of excitement with learning new things, but often her thoughts were only about Adam as she longed to be alone with just him.

As time passed by and days became months, they continually found new things to talk about. Each day the three of them walked about the garden and occasionally paused to sit on the soft velvet grass in the shade of large trees. Yeshua taught them and answered their questions. They laughed and they learned to sing. They listened to animals making various sounds and Adam learned to drop his voice to a very low pitch, which seemed to rumble. Eve learned high pitches like some of the birds and hit some notes so high that it made Adam’s ears hurt but also made his skin tingle.

One day, as the sun began to near the horizon the Creator had them sit down. A stream rippled near them and a breeze made them feel very comfortable.

“*It is time to tell you about some very important things. Deep in the midst of the garden are two trees that you have yet to see. One is called the tree of life. Those who eat its fruit will never die.*” Yeshua explained.

“What do you mean die? What is die? I have never heard that word before,” Eve asked looking back and forth between Adam and Yeshua. Adam just shook his head indicating he was just as ignorant as she was about this new word.

“Life is what you and other living creatures experience now. You breathe, you eat and drink. You move about. Death, to die means that all stops. It all stops completely. No breathing and no moving,” the Creator explained to them.

“You mean it is like holding our breath and not breathing and staying very still and not moving?” Adam asked.

“It is much more, Adam,” Yeshua continued to explain. *“This is something you do not have control over. You can decide to hold your breath and not move but then you can change your mind and start to breathe and move about. In death, you cannot change anything. It is the complete opposite of everything you have experienced in life.”*

“So, if we eat of that tree then we will not die?” Adam asked.

“That is correct,” Yeshua answered.

“I want to eat of that tree. Death sounds terrible. But, what about the other tree? What is it like? What does its fruit do to us? Is there something good or bad about it?” Eve asked.

“The other tree is the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Anyone who eats of it will die,” He stated firmly.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Why would it cause death to learn what is good and evil?” Eve tried to reason.

“All the things I have taught you are truth, the way of all things good and wonderful for you to enjoy. I will continue to teach you and others like you so you will know the truth. To eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is the same as trying to determine, or more precisely, deciding whether something is good or evil on your own totally apart and contrary to what I have taught you.

You simply will never be able to consider on your own or decide for yourselves everything that is ultimately important. What you leave out or do not know or realize will be the very thing that makes something either good or evil. Always listen to exactly what I tell you. Ask me when you find or think of something that is new to you and I will tell you if it is good or evil. Remember what I am telling you.

The tree of knowledge of good and evil is the only tree in the entire garden that you must not eat any of its fruit. Think of it as a test of obedience to me. I have told you not to ever eat of it. To obey me means you must never eat of it. If you disobey me and eat of it, you will die. You must trust me; I will not withhold anything good from you. You do not ever need to try to determine what is true and what is good totally on your own without my guidance. Do you understand?” Yeshua asked them.

“Yes,” Adam replied.

“I think I understand,” Eve answered and then asked. “How can we tell which tree is which?”

“The tree of life has a trunk and main limbs that are straight but smaller limbs extend that are vine-like with small green leaves and clusters of fruit on it that is a deep purple in color,” YESHUA revealed. “The tree of the knowledge of good and evil has a twisted trunk and limbs but this is hidden by its broad yellow leaves and its fruit which is brightly colored round fruit of different colors such as red, yellow, and orange that seem to glow as they reflect the sun.”

“Oh, it sounds pretty,” Eve said without thinking.

“Yes, it does look as you say, very pretty, even beautiful,” Yeshua’s voice paused as He recalled His first sight of the most beautiful angel ever created. Then He continued, *“Beware, do not be misled by its outward beautiful colors because its fruit is very deadly. You must learn that just because something looks ‘pretty’ that does not mean it is good. True beauty and goodness come from within. In fact, just because something even tastes or feels good that does not mean it is not deadly or will not leave you with very terrible pain, suffering, and eventual death. You must never forget that it is not how something appears outwardly that determines if it is good or bad. It is only that which I teach you that is good which will eventually lead to life everlasting. I cannot express My warning with greater urgency. Never, ever, eat of the forbidden fruit from that tree of the knowledge of good and evil for if you do, you will die,”* Yeshua urged them with the most serious almost angry look they had ever seen on His face. He then paused for a short while wanting His warning to sink in deeply into their minds. Later, He continued to teach them encouraging them in always doing things that are good and sometimes again warning them of things that are bad.

Sometimes, they would walk along as He taught them. Other times they would stop and sit down when they came to place that had a wondrous view. Whenever, they became drowsy, He would take

The Beginning of the Beginning

them to a stream and they would all jump into the water and splash around for a while. This refreshed them and as they lay in the sun to dry off, Yeshua would talk with them about what they had learned and ask them questions about what they thought about this or that. As the sun was setting, Yeshua noticed the yawns the couple tried to stifle.

“Well, it is time for sleep. Tomorrow we will go up north,” Yeshua told them as he rose and began to leave them, *“there is a waterfall that is spectacular that I want you to see. It cascades down several drops for about 50 feet and ends in a pool that is as blue as the sky.”*

“Can we dive off the cliffs into the pool?” Adam asked as he followed Yeshua with Eve holding on to his hand.

“I’d rather just swim in the pool,” Eve challenged, “I’ll race you.”

“How about you think of some new kinds of dives? Then we can swim,” Adam offered a compromise.

“All right but I don’t want to go up too high,” she told him.

“Don’t worry, Yeshua will protect you,” he said looking to Yeshua for support.

“I will always have my angels about to look after you. They will see that no harm comes to you unless you get very careless and then they may let you get hurt so you will learn to be more careful,” He admonished. *“However, if I ever tell you to do something then I will absolutely see that no harm comes to you.”*

“Would you watch after me if I try a dive from the top of the waterfall into that pool?” Adam asked hopefully.

“I have watched you learn to dive and 30 feet is the greatest height you have dove from so far. I think you have the talent to dive from a greater height and will exercise the proper care to do it. There are ledges at various heights for you to dive from so work your way up gradually. When you reach the top, you will be ready. Goodnight my children.”

With that, Yeshua was gone. The two lay down on the soft grass their minds racing in anticipation for the events of the next day. Soon, sleep overtook them and they slept soundly wrapped in each other's arms.

Chapter 22

As Time Passes in the Garden

Days and weeks continued to pass quickly and it seemed the sun dropped ever too soon below the horizon as the couple combed the garden for new and exciting things to see and do. However, the awesome spectacular colors that filled sky as the sun set made it easier to stop and find a place to lie down and gaze at the stars in the night sky until they fell asleep. Sometimes they would talk about what wonderful things they had done or learned about or what the next day would be like as they snuggled together on the thick lush carpet of grass. Both slept soundly all night as their adventures exhausted the abundant energy they began with each morning.

Each day they awoke, they would hug and smile at each other. Then they would touch the others lips with theirs having learned that kissing was a nice thing to do. They wondered what new thing they would learn and experience. They hoped their Creator and Teacher would come to them early and stay with them a long time. They never grew tired of being with Yeshua and talking to Him as every moment was full of excitement, wonder, and awe as they marveled at not only what He told or showed them, but His very being and presence was incredible to behold. Time seemed to continually speed up for the couple. Each evening they began to feel like the time spent between awakening and closing their eyes in sleep grew less. Yet, they were always completely tired out after their adventures and it never took much time after their eyes closed that they drifted off into a restful, peaceful sleep.

Sometimes, Yeshua taught the man while the woman was doing other things. Then later on, Adam would teach the woman

everything that he had learned from Yeshua. While teaching, Yeshua totally immersed them in what they were being taught. All their senses were utilized as they saw, heard, felt, smelt, and even tasted various things that not only came to them externally or physically but often directly into their mind and spirit. It took hours, sometimes days for them to fully comprehend what Yeshua was able to give them in minutes. Sometimes it seemed like Eve was quicker to grasp something as she wanted Yeshua to go on to something else. However, Yeshua could see that Adam liked to roll things over in his mind and he actually got a deeper meaning of what Yeshua taught them than Eve.

One thing was certain. Eve was much more inquisitive than Adam was. She was always ready to ask questions, while Adam was content to simply wait for Yeshua to explain whatever it was, whenever Yeshua was ready to explain it. Eve would become perplexed when Adam did not seem to be able to answer some of her questions to her satisfaction when he tried to teach her what Yeshua had taught him. She did not like having to wait and ask Yeshua when He appeared unto them later. She was always impressed when she watched Adam fashion things with his hands or was able to lift and move very heavy things she could hardly budge. Yet, she was able to use her smaller fingers and hands to weave plant fibers into intricate designs and made mats they sometimes sat or slept on and baskets to hold fruit they gathered.

Adam occasionally communicated through his thoughts with Yeshua while the woman almost always used her voice. They worked at developing their grasp of the proper or correct way to phrase ideas or express their thoughts to each other and to Yeshua. Eve gradually became more adventuresome. Soon she was not waiting for Adam to find new things to explain. She went looking for them herself and then exhausted Adam's knowledge. Yeshua

The Beginning of the Beginning

was always there when Adam called to Him, whether by thought or spoken word to answer the woman's questions when he was unable to satisfy her thirst for understanding.

In the woman, Adam had found what he had missed during the first part of his life that had been spent with only Yeshua as a companion. He had always been submissive and in total reverence in his relationship with Yeshua and he loved learning from Him. It was enjoyable also to have a companion that was his equal but who did not know as much as he did and to whom he could teach what he was learning. That is, for the time being. He began to wonder if she would soon exceed his level of knowledge and then start teaching him.

One afternoon while walking along, the woman stopped. She began to look about and then she took a limb that had a sharp end on it and began to dig into the earth.

“What in the world are you doing?” Adam asked her.

“How big is the earth? How deep is the soil? Where does it all stop?” This and more questions came from her lips as she continued to dig. Adam just looked her and in his mind, he called to Yeshua, ‘I need your help here.’

Yeshua appeared next to the hole Eve had made. She began to ask Him the same questions, as Adam just shook his head wondering what the answers were.

“Eve, Adam,” Yeshua began, “I have created you both on what is called a planet that circles the sun you see that seems to cross the sky above you each day. Actually, it is the Earth that is rotating so while you are somewhat stationary on the planet, it is turning, and

you pass under the sun until you can no longer see it. At night, the round orb that you see above you, that crosses the dark sky, is called a moon. Its purpose is to provide set points in time as the sun does for days. Each day when the sun returns to shine that marks the end of the previous day and the beginning of a new day. When this occurs seven times a new week begins. Each time you see a very faint crescent of the moon, called a New Moon, this marks the beginning of a new month. When the earth completes a full revolution about the sun that marks a year.”

“You mean we are riding on a very large ball flying around the sun?” Eve asked excitedly.

“That is one way of putting it,” Yeshua answered.

“What keeps us from falling off or floating off into space?” Adam asked beginning to feel uncomfortable thinking about what he had just heard.

“There is a force called gravity that attracts matter to each other. The larger the matter, the greater the gravitational force. The sun pulls on the earth, the earth pulls on the moon, and the moon pulls on the earth. The earth below you, pulls you down. All the gravitational forces are just right to keep everything where it is supposed to remain,” Yeshua assured them.

“Is the whole earth flat? I mean, I see the hills and valley but...” Eve began to ask.

“I know what you mean,” Yeshua paused briefly as He considered something. “I tell you what. Would you like to take a little trip?”

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Of course,” Adam quickly responded, “Where are we going?”

Yeshua smiled and raised his hand and pointed upward.

“Are we going to ride on a large bird?” Eve asked wide-eyed.

Yeshua’s smile grew larger as He stepped between the two and put His arms around them. Suddenly, all three were rising into the air. Soon, they were above the trees and then they looked down and saw the meadows, the forests, the streams, and even the hills far below them. They finally stopped rising when they were well over a hundred miles above the Earth. The Creator had enveloped them in a bubble that maintained air, temperature, and other conditions they needed to survive while on the edge of space. The sight that met their eyes would not be seen by other humans for thousands of years in the future.

“The earth,” Eve gasped, “It really is like a large blue and green ball with white clouds floating about it in the sky. Wow, we are actually above the sky!”

“It is the most beautiful sight I have ever seen,” Adam said and then quickly added. “Except for you and Eve.”

The spectacle was too incredible for them to speak further as all the words they had learned seemed totally inadequate to express what they saw and felt as they took it all in.

“*My children, this is only the beginning,*” Yeshua told them and then they followed His eyes and looked outward to see the vast Universe with more clarity than would be seen by other humans for thousands of years. Adam and Eve were nearly overloaded with what they had just experienced. Yeshua took them back to the

surface and they collapsed onto the grass. Yeshua smiled and had to stifle His urge to laugh at them especially at the woman. Both had always talked and asked questions of Him nearly non-stop since their creation. Now, they both sat speechless.

“You two just relax and get ready to sleep as night will soon be here,” Yeshua said and they just nodded their heads. He watched them laying there in each other’s arms. Slowly, the perplexed look on their faces changed to a smile and their breathing became relaxed as sleep overcame them. He watched and looked into their dreams and saw them resolve their wonder, to put it into perspective that no matter what they experienced, their Elohim, Yeshua would care for them, and there was nothing to fear.

In the following weeks, the couple frolicked throughout the Garden in Eden. Adam taught Eve to run, swim, jump, and climb to near extremes. He made up games in which they competed. He had greater strength and was taller, but she began to find ways to outdo him occasionally. In swimming, he discovered that she took to it like a fish and soon he simply could not keep up with her. He was able to beat her running short distances but when it came to long distances at some point she would catch and then pass him by before they reached the finish line.

One day, he jumped across a stream and challenged her to do the same. He laughed at her when her attempt ended with her splashing into the water just short of the bank. Later, he noticed that she was not paying attention to what he was saying to her. Her mind was intent on something other than what they were doing. She would look back at the stream and her eyes seem to focus on something she was seeing in her mind. Her head would slowly roll from one side to the other. He asked but she would not tell him what she was thinking about. He would find out soon enough.

The Beginning of the Beginning

She went off on her own for a little while. Finally, she came back and led him to a place on the bank of the stream just a short distance from where she had landed in the water. At that point, she told him that she could cross the stream without getting wet and challenged him to see if he could do the same. Adam looked at the stream and saw that it had broadened at this point. In fact, after sizing it up, he realized that it was almost twice as wide as where they had jumped before. He thought it was impossible. But, he did not want to give up after being challenge without even trying. So, he backed up, and then ran as fast as he could and jumped high into the air. While he sailed in the air quite a distance, he quickly saw that he would not make it to the bank. He began to descend and made a big splash as he landed in the water many feet short of the bank. He was waist deep in the water as he stood up with mud dripping from his head and arms where he had hit the bottom upon landing. Still, he was laughing as he thought about what she would look like when she hit the water. He called to her, “Do not forget to hold your breath when you land in the water.” He began to laugh as he remained in the water watching her and expecting her to land far short of where he had hit the water.

She told him to just stay there, wash off, and wait, as she would be back in just a minute as she turned and ran into the trees nearby. When she came back, she was holding a long tubular section of bamboo from which she had stripped its smaller branches and made a long pole. He tried to figure out what she would do with the pole. It was only a couple of inches around and was too short to cross from bank to bank and even if it was long enough it would break under her weight. Maybe, she is going to throw it at him for laughing at her when she fell in the water the last time.

He watched her as she seemed to be sizing up the distance to cross the water. Then she backed up and lifted the pole off the ground with both her hands. Then she ran as fast as she could toward the water holding the pole with its end high enough that it did not touch the ground. Just as she came to the water's edge, she lowered and shoved the pole out into the water. The pole went down into the water and her momentum carried her upwards as she held onto the end of the pole. She went up high, passing over him, and landing on the bank on the other side dry.

He just stood there with his mouth hanging open as she laughed. She came to the edge and offered her hand to help him out of the water. Shaking his head, he smiled and took her hand. Then instead of coming out of the water, he pulled and in one motion flipped her out into the water. She came back up with mud on her face. She started toward him with her arms down beside her smiling and beginning to laugh. He reached out to take her in his arms not realizing she had something in her hands. As they embraced, she rubbed her hands on his head. Then mud began to drip down into his face and onto his shoulders. He just let it ooze down and then began kissing her. She kissed him back and then realized that the mud was dripping onto her face as well. She drew back as he began to laugh. At arm's length, they just looked at each other and both laughed. He reached down, cupped water in his hands, and gently began to wash the mud off her face. She took his hands and pulled him into deeper water and together they dunked under the water. It took several plunges, but soon they were free of the mud and swam to a large flat rock protruding out of the water and crawled out on it and then lay down on it to dry off in the sun.

He asked her how she had come up with the idea of using the pole to help her vault over the water. She explained that she remembered how he had often lifted her up and tossed her into the

The Beginning of the Beginning

water while they were playing in the water. Then about how he had taken a tall tubular section of bamboo that was not very large in diameter and after easily stripping the small branches off it had used it to knock some fruit off a tall tree for them to eat. She remembered using the pole herself to get a piece of fruit; how it was light enough for her to raise it up and that it seemed very strong. While he was napping after eating, she climbed up a tree and placed a length of bamboo across two limbs. Then she climbed under one of the limbs, took hold of the bamboo pole, and then hung on it with both hands. It was more than strong enough to hold her weight without bending. She realized it could be used to vault from one place, going high into the air, and then landing. She practiced and determined just how far she could vault. Then she had found a place where the stream was about the same distance. That was when she was ready to challenge Adam.

Adam laughed and admired her ingenuity. More and more he had to think things through in order to beat her in activities he thought of and she continued to express her own ideas for activities and games as well. Their lives were never dull or boring. They did not even know the meaning of such words.

Late one evening after a full day of exciting adventures, they were lying in the soft grass under a massive tree. A breeze blew through the leaves and Eve had just finished singing a song she had made up about Adam and how wonderful he was to her. He had laughed and smiled at her and shook his head at some of the words she had used for they did not say what she really intended. Yeshua had taught him a proper way to use words and occasionally she would get some words mixed up as she tried to express new ideas or how she felt about things. Still, she was trying so hard to copy him and learn what he knew.

She lay beside him looking at his side and began tracing the scar with her finger. She looked up at him and said, “Hurt?” He held her hand on his scar for a moment and looked deep into her eyes.

“That is where you came from inside of me. You are truly bone of my bones, flesh of my flesh. Our hearts beat as one,” he said softly, “I named you Eve because in time you and I will give life to others of our kind to share in our joy in this wonderful world our Creator has made for us.”

“Oh, Adam, I live to please you,” she replied as she snuggled in his strong arms.

“Eve, my love. I couldn’t live without you,” he said as his lips touched hers.

Chapter 23

Eve Is Tempted

The couple had wandered throughout a great deal of the garden to see its beauty and wonders. They could not comprehend just how large it was. Even from their adventure into the upper atmosphere with Yeshua, the area of the Garden was soon hidden by clouds as they rose upward so they did not know its limits. There was one place near what they thought was the center and they had passed it several times. It was ringed by tall rocky cliffs with only one entrance through a gap. Whenever they stumbled upon this entrance through the gap, they would run away from it as they felt there was something foreboding in there or the Creator would have shown it to them.

For several days, the couple had been enjoying playing a new game they had made up. It involved one of them going and hiding while the other tried to find them after covering their eyes and slowly counting to 100. If the seeking person could not find the hiding person within the time the sun moved half of its arc the hider won. Then they would trade places hiding and finding each other. Eve became exasperated as Adam always quickly found her while it always took hours for her to find him. Sometimes she had to give up as the arc of the sun had passed the deadline. She would sit stewing, as he would return with a big grin on his face. He finally explained how he was able to find her so quickly. He showed her how her feet left marks on the ground and how some twigs were broken and blades of grass were bent over where she walked. She began to use this to find him. When it was her turn to hide, she used rocks and crossed streams to try to keep from leaving an easy path for him to

find her. Still, he was relentless in searching to pick up her trail when it seemed to disappear.

On one particular day as she sought a new hiding place, she came to a large boulder where they had always turned right to continue their journeys. She looked to the right and then back to the left. She had been running very hard for quite some time and had become so tired she could hardly walk. But, she pushed on trying her best to try and get much farther away so Adam would not be able to find her.

‘What is to the left?’ She wondered, as her eyes could not see beyond the thick stand of bushes and trees. She staggered along an overgrown path between bushes and trees and soon came to an opening in the tall rocky cliffs. Something seemed familiar and just a little further she saw that this led into a valley. Then she remembered that this was the place she and Adam felt afraid to enter. A thought entered her mind. Adam will not find me here. She determined to outsmart Adam and she continued further down a sloping path until she came to a small clearing. Suddenly before her, two large trees rose up from the valley floor. They were like no other trees she had ever seen. These were tall and majestic, towering high over the trees of the forest surrounding the clearing.

As her eyes took in the features of both trees, she realized something strange. How odd she thought there are no birds in their branches. Even the wind does not move their leaves. A cloud passed in front of the sun and she saw that the fruit on one of the trees actually seemed to glow. The tree nearest her looked like its branches were more like vines than tree limbs. They seemed to curl around forming a round shape from top to bottom. It had small light green colored leaves that were round and its fruit hung in clusters. Each piece of fruit was small and had a dark purple color. It was

The Beginning of the Beginning

nearly impossible to see the trunk and limbs of the other tree behind the large yellow leaves. All over the tree were round fruit colored red, yellow, and orange. Whenever the sun went behind the clouds all the fruit seemed to glow. It was an incredible sight even more so than the stars at night.

All the running and walking suddenly caught up with her and she felt very tired and sunk down to the ground, too weary to walk any further. At first, she just sat there resting in the shade between the two trees. As she looked upward, she fell backward and found herself lying on her back. Soon, her eyes began to linger longer and longer on the tree with the many-colored fruit.

This was the opportunity Satan had been waiting for. He had the woman alone and now he would make his move. Changing his outward appearance to that of a shining multicolored serpent that resembled a snake but had four small legs. He slinked his way behind the trunk of the tree with the multicolored fruit that was close enough to where the woman was lying so that he did not have speak very loud for her to hear him.

“Is it not beautiful?” a voice whispered near her.

She turned and saw the head and long neck of a creature lying on the ground partially obscure by the tree with the colorful fruit not far from her. It slithered out from behind the tree and its slender head extended several feet upward from a long body that coiled up when it stopped. Its four short legs had claws but they did not appear as very useful to help it move around. Its long tail swayed back and forth. It seemed to be smiling as it gazed at her. Then she recalled seeing a creature something like this that did not have legs and that Adam called a serpent or snake. Today, there is a snake that

resembles the shape of this creature (without the legs) that is called a King Cobra.

“You can talk?” she said somewhat startled actually trying to make a statement but it sounded like she was asking a question.

“Did you not know?” it softly answered with a hiss in its voice.

“No, I have never heard any animal in the garden speaking words,” she said.

“So? Well, well, she does not know? There must be a lot of things that she does not know. Perhaps she needs to learn?” the serpent voice replied as it slowly slithered closer to her till it was right in front of her and again raised its head above its long tubular body. In that position, it caused her to look directly at the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.

“We learn new things every day from Yeshua, our Elohim,” she answered.

“Yes, I am sure you do. You look famished. You must be near starvation. Why don’t you rise and eat of the fruit of this tree in front of you?” the serpent suggested and then asked, “Or did Elohim say you cannot eat of the fruit of the trees in this garden and must go hungry if there are no berries nearby?”

“No,” she corrected him and then pointing to the tree with multicolored fruit she said, “He said we could eat of any tree except that tree right there. He said not to even touch it because if we eat of it, we will die.”

The Beginning of the Beginning

The serpent's head swayed back and forth as a hissing laughter came from its mouth. "Die, die?" He continued to laugh. "Do you think Elohim can die?" it asked as it stopped laughing and brought its head very close to hers with its eyes intensely looking into hers.

"Of course not," she replied.

"Don't you realize that you look just like Elohim? How do you know that you are not Elohim? Does Elohim have more fingers than you? Does Elohim have two heads? Does Elohim float about or have wings? Does Elohim really tell you everything?" It peppered her with questions.

"Yes, no, no, no, no, I mean yes, no, I don't know! Stop asking so many questions," she had tried to answer; but, gave up as the questions confused her.

"You don't really know much at all, do you?" it challenged her.

"No, I guess I don't," she answered somewhat bewildered.

"Don't feel sad. It's not your fault," the serpent said in a comforting voice, "and don't worry about what you were told. You humans are a lot like Elohim. If he cannot die, then you cannot really die. Yes, you humans are just like Elohim. Well, that's not exactly true. Just take a look at yourself. Your bodies are quite different in a certain shameful anatomical way."

"What is shameful about how I look?" she asked as the serpent had turned and acted as if it was about to wander away. "What are you talking about? Oh, please don't go. What is different about us and Elohim? Please tell me?" She called.

The serpent stopped and turned to look at her. It just slowly shook its head as it came back toward her and began to chide her, “Don’t you see? If you ate of this tree... Now what did Elohim call it? Ah yes, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Wow, what a name. Why would Elohim call it that and not want you to eat of it and be able to know right and wrong? Maybe, he does not want you to know the difference just so he could catch you doing wrong and then, ZAP! You are a pile of ashes. Ha, ha, ha. Or just maybe, Elohim eats from this tree and that is how he knows so much. He wants it all for himself. Ha, ha, ha.” The serpent continued to laugh.

“Just goes to show how much you know. Yeshua is very patient with us as He teaches us new things,” she said angrily thinking the serpent was just making fun of her.

“NO, the truth is Yeshua does not want you to know right and wrong because if you did you would not have to ask Him. How would you like to be him and then have your creation know just as much as you did? If you ate this fruit, you would know and not have to be told everything. Then you would truly be just like Elohim in every way. Does Elohim ask you what is the answers to questions He has? Of course not! How do you think he is able to know what is right and wrong in the first place? Just get a good smell of this fruit and see if you don’t remember that same smell on His breath. I’ll tell you a secret, I see him coming down here every day gorging on this fruit. Honestly, I don’t think he wants to share it. I have to watch out because he throws rocks at me if he sees me getting too close to ‘His’ tree. I bet he keeps a running total of every single piece of fruit on this tree. He enjoys knowing all but He does not like having to share all of what He knows with others. You want to know why He goes off all the time leaving you alone.”

“Why?” she asked beginning to stew about what the serpent was telling her.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Because he cannot hold it any longer. He goes off so He can laugh at you. He is probably laughing at you and Adam right now as how you both run about all over the garden naked as a jaybird.”

“What do you mean?” she demanded getting a bit irate at the serpents berating Elohim and Adam and especially her.

“Where’s your clothes?” it demanded with a smirk, “You don’t see the great Yeshua running around naked. Just look at yourself. Naked, naked, you should be ashamed of yourself going about like that. It’s disgusting. Even animals have coats of fur and I have scales for a covering of my private areas. But, you don’t wear anything.” It began slowly slithering away again while it continued to make a hissing laughter sound and exclaiming, “Shame, shame, shame!”

“Oh, stop it,” she cried out, “leave me alone.”

She looked about for a stone to throw at the creature but when she turned back, it was gone. She sat down, curled up in a fetal position, and began to sob as she longed for Adam. What did it mean, naked, shameful? She did not understand. Thoughts whirled about in her head. She felt like the whole world was spinning about her and she felt nauseated. She again began to cry and call out, “Adam, oh Adam, I need you. Please come, please come to me.” Her exhaustion finally caught up with her and she wearily closed her eyes and fell into a troubled sleep.

She dreamed of her and Adam lying on the ground under the tree of multicolored fruit. Adam had been snoring and she was awake lying beside him laughing at the sounds he was making. Suddenly one of the fruit fell from the tree and landed in his mouth.

She had gasped and tried to get it out but Adam had taken a bite and had swallowed it. Yeshua had suddenly appeared before them and He was very angry. He held a large gleaming sword and was ready to strike Adam.

But, Adam looked up at Him with no sign of fear. He then bowed his head and said, “If it be wrong for me to be as You to know right and wrong, then take my life. It is yours to give and yours to take. Blessed be the name of the Lord.”

At that Yeshua dropped the sword and pulled Adam to his feet.

“There are so many things that are evil that I did not want you to know about so you would not be troubled,” Yeshua told him.

“If Adam must die then I want to die too,” Eve said as she pulled a piece of fruit and took a bite. In a flash, she felt like her eyes had become clearer and she could see far off in any direction she looked. Answers to questions she had never asked began to fill her mind. She heard music and Yeshua and Adam were laughing and they took her hands and the three of them began to spin in a circle.

“Don’t worry my children; Yeshua was telling them, “I won’t let you die.”

Chapter 24

Eve Then Adam Sins

Eve awoke laughing and crying at the same time and found herself in Adam's arms. For a long time, she could not say anything but cried as Adam tried to comfort her.

"Eve, honey, what's wrong? It's alright, you are safe, I am here," he kept asking what was wrong but she would not say anything. She just held onto him. After, a while they both fell asleep in the grass near the two trees.

Eve awoke with a start. She could not remember dreaming this time and was lying beside Adam and he still had his arms about her. Was she, all right? Yes, she felt warm and secure now that Adam was with her. She carefully slid out from his arms and rose to her feet. Rested she felt stronger and surer of herself. Her mind began to search through everything she had learned in her short life span. She felt there were some things that she had not been told. Important things that Adam and Yeshua were keeping from her. Why did she have to wait and be told everything? Why couldn't she decide for herself?

Her stomach made a growling sound. She was hungry and there were no bushes with berries or fruit trees she was used to eating from anywhere she could see near the clearing. Her eyes came back around to the two trees in the midst of the clearing. The colorful one sparkled and seemed to beckon her. The other had fruit but it was too high up for her to reach and she did not want to wake Adam so he could reach up and get some fruit to share with her. She slowly

walked over to the colorful tree and noticed it had pieces of fruit on vines like branches all the way down nearly touching the ground.

As she drew nearer, she prepared to run away if the tree somehow tried to reach out with its limbs to grab her. She began to notice that the smell from the fruit was so sweet it was almost intoxicating. She tried to remember the smell of Yeshua's breath. It never smelled foul. But, she could not remember it smelling sweet either. Then she reached out and touched one of the yellow colored pieces of fruit and quickly drew her hand back. She thought it might burn her hand or be extremely cold or something that was not pleasant. Yet, it did not hurt her hand. She reached out again and took a hold of a piece of red colored fruit. It felt firm but ripe and was easily plucked from the tree. All her senses told her that this fruit would taste wonderful and would satisfy her hunger. So, what's so bad about wanting to be like Yeshua, she asked herself? No one told Yeshua what to do and what to think all the time. She decided that it was about time for her to do what she wanted to do and think what she wanted to think on her own.

Adam awoke and looked up just as Eve took a bite of one of the multicolored fruits. He screamed out in horror and ran to her.

She swallowed the mouthful of fruit and felt an intoxicating rush throughout her body. She then turned to see Adam racing toward her with terror on his face. She felt giddy and laughed at him. Then she wiped her mouth and took another bite. "Silly," she said as she took another piece and handed it to him. "See, I'm still alive" she again laughed and began to dance about him. "I feel wonderful." She continued to frolic.

Adam did not have the words to describe the fear and exasperation he felt. His companion had done the forbidden act and

The Beginning of the Beginning

now he knew she was to die, if not right then at some later time. He did not doubt Yeshua's warning. Oh why, why had she done this terrible thing? At some time, he again would be alone. He looked at Eve with tears in his eyes but she just danced about as if she did not have a care in the world. However, when she looked back at him, he noticed her expression was different than it had ever been before. As her gaze went down his body, she would roll her eyes and act like something was wrong. In a flash, his memory recalled the very first time he had seen her. He saw in his mind their adventures and special times of being together, alone, of being one. He felt he could never desire to be with another companion. In his mind, he felt that he had no other choice as he made his fateful decision. If Eve had to die then he would die also. He lifted the fruit to his mouth.

Eve looked up into his face and stopped dancing around. Her eyes met his as she saw him about to bite into the red colored fruit, she had handed him. At that moment, she knew he was doing this for her. She started to tell him not to do it for she was beginning to feel like she had lost something very precious even though her mind continued to race thinking things she had never contemplated before. Tears ran down Adam's cheek as he took the bite, chewed it up, and then swallowed. He began to choke as some of the piece seemed to hang up in his throat while the rest went down to his stomach. Eve reached out to steady him as it looked like he was about to fall down.

"Oh, No!" she screamed, "You can't die. Oh Adam, I'm sorry, Oh Elohim, please don't let him die."

"Eve, my love," he whispered after clearing his throat, "We have done a terrible thing. I don't know why you did it but I know why I did it. I know I could never want to live without you. Oh, Eve. We have disobeyed Yeshua."

“But, we did not die,” she began to tell him, “See, there are a lot of things Yeshua has not told us. Maybe He just did not want us know everything like He knows for then we would not need Him?”

“That is foolish,” Adam responded.

“Well, He never told us we are naked,” Eve stated her voice sounding somewhat bitter.

“What do you mean, naked?” Adam asked.

“I did not understand myself until I ate of the fruit,” she answered, “But, haven’t you noticed that Yeshua’s body is covered with that long white material with a golden belt about his middle?”

“Well, yes,” he said seeing Yeshua in his mind’s eye and sensing a dread at the thought.

“And have you noticed animals have coats of fur, birds are cloaked with feathers, and even reptiles have scales. They all have coverings but we are naked. My breasts are exposed for every creature in the whole world to see even though my vagina is partially hidden by hair. But, look at you. Your private parts are openly displayed and when you look at me sometimes you start getting big...”

“Stop talking that way,” Adam nearly shouted and then cringed holding his hands down in front of his male organ.

“Yeshua and the angels must get a big laugh watching us parade about naked. Doesn’t it make you feel ashamed?” she admonished.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Thoughts raced through his head at her words. That feeling he felt must be because she is right. We have been going about naked. Was Yeshua just waiting for us to find out? Did He feel ashamed of us because we did not have the common sense to dress ourselves with clothing as He did? After all, He did not wash our faces or bodies when we became dirty. Nor did His hand feed us when we were hungry. He expected us to do these things ourselves.

“Let’s get out of here,” he told Eve and began to retrace his steps away from the dreadful trees.

“Stop,” Eve called to him, “Let’s eat of the other tree.”

“No,” Adam said with finality, “That’s exactly what Yeshua would expect us to do after eating the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil.”

“But it’s supposed to be the tree of life,” Eve begged.

“The one we ate was supposed to kill us and it didn’t. So, do you not think that the other one that is supposed to give us life just might be the one that would kill us instead?” he warned.

As they reached the path outside the rocky cliffs, they both began to feel nervous. It seemed to them that all the animals and even the birds were watching them. The sounds they made began to sound like laughter. Adam stopped by a bush with large leaves and began plucking them. Without being told to, Eve’s hands worked swiftly to intertwine leaves together with vines. Soon, they both had an apron of leaves that covered their private parts. Eve fashioned another piece that hung about her neck, over her breasts and Adam helped her fasten it together in the back. Again, they started walking

down the path. Now, that they were at least somewhat clothed their self-awareness was lessened.

Chapter 25

Yeshua Discovers Their Sins

“Adam, Eve, where are you?” A familiar voice came from just around the bend ahead of them. Usually, Yeshua called to them before He made His presence appear before them. He limited His vision to be obstructed by things that blocked the vision of His Creation to give them privacy.

Without thinking, Adam and Eve had started to run from the path and their wrappings had falling apart so they both hid behind some bushes.

“Where are you?” Yeshua again called to them.

“We are back here behind these bushes,” Adam responded reluctantly.

“What are you doing back there?” Yeshua asked.

“We were startled when we heard your voice. We hid here because our garments of leaves fell apart exposing our nakedness,” Adam answered.

“Who told you that you are naked?” Yeshua thundered as He came around the bushes and faced them both, *“Have you disobeyed me and eaten of the forbidden tree?”*

“The woman,” Adam’s voice cracked, *“The woman you gave me. She gave it to me. Yes, I did eat of it.”*

Yeshua turned to Eve His eyes showing not only anger but also bewilderment as He asked, *“What have you done? How could you? Why, why did you do what I commanded you not to do?”*

“It’s not my fault,” she began to cry and answered in fear, “a serpent told me all kinds of things you have not told us. It said we would not die and that we would be more like you. I didn’t know what to do. I, I, Oh, sob...,” she cried.

Just then, the serpent that had been in a tree watching the scene that was taking place below, slipped and fell from the branch it was on. It coiled its tail and its head rose up as it hissed and flicked its tongue. Then it began to slither away to find a hole to crawl into.

“Stop! I know who you are,” Yeshua addressed the serpent that froze where it lay, *“Your disguise does not mask your treachery and evil character. That form you have taken, a serpent, a snake, shall be cursed above all cattle and creatures of the land because it lent itself for your use. From this time on all snakes will have its habitat in the dirt of the Earth and on its belly, will it eat of the dust of the ground. All women and their children will hate it, and seek to kill it wherever they find it. Satan, in time you may bruise the chosen seed’s heel but He will crush your head in the end. Be gone, you vile serpent. Take your master with you away from this place.”*

As the serpent quickly fled, its legs withered and fell off, and it slithered on its belly seeking darkness to hide from the sunlight. Yeshua turned to the woman who stood with her face covered with her hands still sobbing. He took her hands from her face and held them while she continued to cry. His face and eyes no longer showed anger but were full of sorrow and compassion.

“Eve,” He began to tell her, *“From this day your life will not be the same. You will no longer have days full of joy and adventure but*

The Beginning of the Beginning

rather days of toil, sorrow, and pain. You will bring forth from your womb many children by your husband Adam and you will experience terrible pain at the time of birth. However, you will forget the pain and the comfort of your babies will give your life an incredible meaning. You and other women will have a great desire for your husbands who will rule over you. Some husbands will not love their wives as Adam loves you, Eve, and they will mistreat their wives. Mankind will suffer terribly because of what you have done.”

“Adam,” Yeshua turned to him. His eyes showed tenderness, yet with a firm voice, he began to tell him, *“Because you did not obey me and failed to listen to what I commanded you to not eat of the forbidden tree but rather listened to the words of your wife, your days will become days of toil. You will no longer find the fruit to nourish and sustain you readily available. The ground you live on will be cursed with thorns and thistle. You will have to work the land for it to bring forth its fruit. Your hands will become calloused and your back will ache from your toil and you will wet the ground with sweat falling from your skin. From the dirt of the Earth I made you and back to the dirt you will return when your life is over.”*

In the space of a fraction of a second in their time, they could not see that Yeshua had returned to the throne to speak with Yahweh.

“Well,” Yah began, *“the man has failed to resist Satan’s lies.”*

“Yes, but indirectly. He would not have listened to Satan directly but he did listen to him through his wife. How powerful his feeling of love for her must be that he would rather die than be separated from her,” Yeshua replied.

“Now they must both die,” Yah said grimly.

“There is now a greater love than even the man has for his wife. One perhaps even greater than our love for each other,” Yeshua said as tears began to form in His eyes and He fully comprehended a feeling that He had never realized before.

“What do you mean?” Yah responded in amazement.

“I now fully realize that I too do not want to live if the man we have created must perish forever,” He said as He began to weep.

“What other choice do we have?” Yah asked in astonishment. Then His memory flashed back and He realized the answer as He had felt and somehow had known since the idea of making a man was conceived.

“I will give my life in their place,” Yeshua declared.

“Your life is infinitely worth more than everything and every person who will ever live from the pair we have created. All of our creations on Earth, in the universe, or even in heaven put together could never equal your life. However, you are right and it must be done. It requires the shedding of blood to atone for sin. Your life will be sacrificed in the place of all who sin if they repent of their sins accepting you as their Savior so they may be forgiven of their sins. But, that will not happen until the time is right and it will be done according to a plan I made even before we began creation, just in case this terrible event did happen,” He smiled as He wiped the tears from Yeshua’s eyes.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Then You had the same plan that I had at that very time even though we did not speak of it,” Yeshua said as His sadness changed to hope and a smile formed on His face.

“Yes,” Yah answered, “Our thoughts, our plans, our very being is, has been, and always will be as one. There is one more part of this plan. I will not continue into eternity without You by my side. Once You have surrendered Your life, Your body will lie in the grave for three full days. When that is complete, I will call You back from death to arise and You shall have Your body restored to the immortal state it has been for eons of eternity.”

“At that time, My body as well as My whole being will be more glorified than it is now,” Yeshua said as He began to disappear.

Part Five:

The Children of Adam

Chapter 26

Death Becomes a Reality

In the same instant, that Yeshua had left Yah, Yeshua now stood before the couple.

Now His countenance began to grow grim as He looked at them while they awkwardly tried to use their hands to cover the private areas of their bodies. Slowly, He shook His head and then began to tell them, *“I have been not only your teacher but also a father to you. I made every molecule in your bodies and gave you life. There is nothing you can or need to hide from me. There is nothing about your bodies that is shameful. You are both beautiful from head to toes and everything in between. In time, I would have given you garments such as I wear to add to your beauty. There was no need for any covering as you were both one and alone in this garden. Now I see that still in your minds there remains a feeling of guilt and you seek to cover your outward parts to hide the real shame you feel inside for disobeying me.”*

“I am so sorry,” Adam said with tears in his eyes, “please forgive me for disobeying You.”

“I am sorry too. Oh, why did I listen to that evil creature? Please forgive me, Lord,” Eve moaned and cried as Adam took her into his arms to comfort her as they both wept bitterly.

“I am glad that you feel that way. Sadly, words cannot undo the terrible wrong that you have done. When you disobey me, it is sin and sin brings death. Only the shedding of blood can atone for

such a wrong. Now blood must be shed!” Yeshua finished speaking as His voice expressed anger.

Adam and Eve cried out in fear as a gleaming knife appeared in Yeshua’s hand. However, He turned from them and picked up a lamb that they had not noticed before that was tangled and caught in a bush nearby. He looked them both in the eye as He put the knife to its throat, piercing it, and cutting the jugulars and then held it up high by its hind legs. They watched in horror as the lamb made no sound but they could see its life slowly leave its body as the blood flowed out on the ground. Soon the blank cold look in its eyes and its lifeless body told them that they were seeing for the first-time what death means.

“You both know that it is your blood that deserves to have been poured out on this soil because of your sins?” He asked them sternly.

“Yes, Lord,” they answered still shaking in fear and dread.

“This sacrifice of the blood of this animal will do for now. When you sin, you must offer a sacrifice of certain animals such as this one. Such sacrifices simply put off the real sacrifice that must eventually be made to pay the price of sin. Yes, in time a much greater sacrifice must be paid because the shedding of the blood of animals can never pay the full price for sin. Animal sacrifices are just a reminder that sin brings death. Never, never, ever forget that.

“In time, you both will surely die because of what you have done today. The children that you bring into this world will also die and their children’s children. Because they will follow your example and commit sins before the Elohim that has given them life and because of their sins they too will perish. Your bodies will grow old as will all who are born of flesh and blood and in death, your mortal

The Beginning of the Beginning

bodies will decompose returning to the ground from whence you came.

“Some of your children may die a tragic untimely death as this lamb. Nevertheless, as you and your children strive to obey me and all that I have taught you in doing right, you will do well. However, as you and your children do wrong and disobey my teachings, sorrow, pain, suffering, and misery will curse you and your offspring. Adam, Eve...remember this day. Teach your children about why their lives are hard and trying. Yet, give them hope, just as you have been forgiven so will they, but a blood sacrifice must be made to remind all that sin brings death. You must be sincere as you call on my name in sorrow regretting your sin, confessing it in prayer to Me, and striving to forsake the way of disobedience.

“While I will hear your prayer and forgive, you must realize that not only is sin wrong because it is disobedience to your Elohim, sin brings its own terrible penalty as well. Even though I forgive you, often you will still suffer the consequences in this life of having done something that is wrong. I will now provide garments made from the hide of this lamb. You will not see me in the future as you have while living here in this garden. When I depart you will have to leave this garden.”

They listened intently in remorse while He continued to talk to them as He dressed out the lamb separating the skin from its inward parts. He spoke and fire came down and consumed the carcass leaving only the skin in His hands. His hands moved in a blur as the skin was miraculously dried, cured, tanned, and then divided into shapes to clothe them. Then He handed to each of them a garment. Adam slipped his garment on around his midsection while Eve's garment draped over her right shoulder and covered her body down to her thighs.

Yeshua put a hand on each of their shoulders and looked each of them in the eye, *“Know this; I have enjoyed and loved the time we have spent together and will treasure it always. Though you may not see me again as you do now, I want you to know that I will never be far away. Call on my name and my presence will be with you. I have loved you far greater than you will ever know as you live out the rest of your mortal lives. Yet, a day will come when you will know this fully.”*

Afterwards He put His arms around and hugged both of them. Then He stepped back and sighed deeply as His form slowly faded from their sight.

“Michael, Gabriel! Take flaming swords,” In the third heaven, Yeshua commanded them, *“and drive the man and woman from the garden and then guard it, so no mortal can ever enter it again to try to eat of the tree of life!”*

Adam and Eve stood still somewhat spell bound until they smelled something burning. They turned to see two awesome manlike creatures with wings coming toward them, each waving a sword that blazed with fire. The woman cried out in fear and Adam grabbed her hand and both began running away from the creatures. They tried to turn to the left but one of the creatures appeared and blocked their path. The same thing happened when they tried to turn to the right. Finally, they were driven through a gap in the ridge of mountains that surrounded the entire garden. Only then were they allowed to pause to catch their breath. They turned and saw the creatures were no longer following them.

They realized these two creatures were Great Archangels sent by Yeshua and that the garden was forever lost to them. Their

The Beginning of the Beginning

flaming swords continually being waved about proclaimed death to any who might try to enter the garden.

Adam looked at Eve as she clung close by his side. They were now in a strange new place that was outside of the garden. There were hills and valleys, trees and open fields and streams of water. However, he could tell that there was a different smell and look to it from what he had experienced in the garden. The sweet smell of flowers was replaced by a pungent odor.

As they began to walk, their feet hurt from the stones and thistles that were all about instead of the lush grasses they had known. Adam had to stop and pull a thorn from his foot. Moments later, Eve cried out in pain as a briar cut her arm and blood trickled from the wound. Yes, this was a different world from the one they had known since they came to life in the Garden.

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 27

The First Family Increases

They walked down a hillside toward a stream. When they dropped to their knees and scooped up a handful of water, they found it was warm and tasted of dirt. Still, it refreshed them. After wiping her mouth, Eve turned to Adam and said, “I’m hungry.”

Adam stood and looked about hoping to find some fruit. None was in sight. He helped Eve up and together they began searching. After several hours, they found a tree with yellowish green fruit he remembered from the Garden that he had named ‘pear’. However, the tree was tall and they could not reach the fruit from the ground. They had not seen anything they could use as poles to knock the fruit down. Adam went to the trunk and had to jump as high as he could in order to catch hold of its lowest branch. His strong arms allowed him to pull himself up. He climbed up and then out on a branch. Holding to a branch above the one he was standing on he began to shake some fruit loose that fell to the ground. Except for one piece.

“Oww!” cried Eve as that one piece landed on her head. She rubbed her head and felt a knot that rose up on her head. Her attention was drawn to the fruit on the ground and she grabbed a piece of fruit and hungrily began to eat. With one hand, she held the fruit and with the other hand, she rubbed her head. As her hunger began to be assuaged, she realized that she had never felt pain like the one she was experiencing after the fruit hit her head. The only pain she could remember was once she bit her tongue while eating and another time, she stepped on a pebble that was on a rock. Both were much less painful as this new experience. She wondered how much worse pain she might discover in this new world.

Adam climbed down and began gathering some fruit. Sweat was dripping from his forehead from his exertion and he noticed that Eve also was wet from perspiration as she used her garment to hold a bunch of fruit. He did not remember either of them ever working up a sweat searching for food while they had been in the garden. He looked up at the sun feeling its warmth and then motioned for Eve to follow him. They made their way to the shade of a large leafy tree and sat down to rest and finish eating.

“Ohh,” Eve moaned again rubbing her head, “Hurt.”

“I’m sorry,” Adam said as he gently touched and then kissed the injured spot, “we must be more careful. Next time, when I try to get some fruit to fall be sure to stand away from under the tree.”

“Maybe next time you can lift me up into the tree and I will shake the fruit out,” Eve said with an interesting smile on her face.

“Oh sure,” he then said, “I probably would have to run like the blazes as soon as I let go of you or I’d probably find a bushel of fruit dropping on my head as pay back.”

Both began to laugh and Eve tossed a piece of fruit at him that bounced off his large chest as if it had hit a tree. This only made them both laugh even harder.

As they ate, Adam was thinking. How different this is. The fruit in the Garden was everywhere and all we had to do is reach out and get it. We did not have to climb. We could reach them with a long bamboo pole. Oh, Yes, I remember now. We can use long poles to knock the fruit loose instead of climbing trees. I will have to find a stand of bamboo to use as poles and other things we will

The Beginning of the Beginning

need. Now we have to search to find food and even then, it is not easy to get to it. Adam began to remember what Yeshua had taught him about different plants with berries and roots that were good for food. He had wondered why Yeshua was teaching him these things, as there was an abundance of food easily picked from various plants everywhere in the garden. The realization of what they had lost because of their disobedience was hard to face. Every time he thought of such things, it made him very sad. He determined that he would teach his offspring everything that he could remember from Yeshua's teachings. He remembered that Yeshua had told him that he would be blessed when he did right and be cursed when he did wrong.

As the days began to pass, finding food was generally hard work. They soon developed sores on their arms and legs from scratches because of having to work their way through thorns to get to some berries. Eve had asked Adam if he had seen any thorns like they were finding in the Garden and he replied that he did not remember any. From time to time, angels began to appear when they were terribly miserable and called out to Yeshua for help. The angels explained things to Adam and Eve teaching them how to do new things they had not learned in the Garden to make life more tolerable.

They taught them how to get milk from animals such as goats and oxen. They also taught them how to capture animals and then how to kill them as painlessly as possible. They learned how to preserve meat by cooking and drying strips with smoke. They learned to prepare and cook the meat to eat with vegetables. Learning to cultivate land and plant seeds in long rows. Soon, they finished preparing a garden. As the months passed by, they were able to begin harvesting some vegetables but most took several more months to ripen. They also learned to prepare animal skins for clothing and for other uses.

They began to notice that not only was the terrain different from the Garden, the temperature was also more extreme. Days were warmer and nights were colder. The wind blew harder and the clouds would occasionally grow dark and threatening. But, they did not ever see or feel a drop of rain. The cycle of water between clouds and the sea and land was hardly visible. They usually saw and felt the dew in the mornings. Sometimes they saw fog, which is just a low cloud. They even felt a mist but there never was rain. Elohim used this cycle to keep the world's climate in balance. In the future, this would change in a very dramatic way.

Adam established a system of measurements he could use to build things. He used the length of his foot as a base measure he simply called a 'foot'. He also discovered that two of his large strong hands side by side also equaled a foot. There were ten fingers on his two hands so finger widths were used for smaller measures. For longer measures he measured the length from the tip of his middle finger to the tip of his elbow and called this a cubit. This measure was about the length of two feet.

Adam figured out for himself how to make an axe from sharp rocks that he wedged and lashed to a round handle he fashioned from a limb. He could use this to cut down trees and trim branches. Using branches and leather straps, he made ladders to reach up into trees to get fruit. He made some furniture basically consisting of a table and some chairs. Eve wove strips of animal skins and made a hammock that was tied between two trees. She climbed into it and lay there and the relaxed look that came on her face was such that Adam wanted to try it. Immediately afterwards, Eve had to make another hammock so both of them could relax and even sleep in them.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Adam had noticed that many animals had places to stay at night and to raise their offspring's. Some lived in caves, some had holes in the ground, and some built nests in the trees. Adam decided that mankind would live in a house above the ground. After sketching out details in the soft dirt, he had the details of a plan set in his mind. He knew what he needed to do.

He began cutting a lot of trees into logs. Many were twelve cubits long to be used for the four walls. These were notched about a foot from the end and by crossing and stacking every other row, he was able to form four tight fitting walls for a log cabin. Adam was extremely strong and was able to lift several times his weight time after time throughout the daylight portion of a day without becoming overly tired. Most of the time he lifted an end of a long log into place and then went to the other end, picked it up, and then set it in place. Eve was also very strong and could easily lift her weight repeatedly without tiring for many hours of a day. Often, she would help Adam by holding things in place while he secured it. As the wall height reached above his head, Eve was needed as he set each log in place. While she could not lift the logs, once set in place, she could hold onto them and keep them from moving while Adam went to the other end. Adam built temporary platforms so he could make the walls a couple of cubits higher than his head. These were extended upwards when it was time to build the roof.

Long beams made from smaller diameter trees were used as rafters that spanned the opening from the higher wall on one side down to the top of the lower wall on the opposite side. Notches on the top log of each wall and on the rafters held them in place. Smaller logs were placed across the rafters again using notches to hold them in place. Besides the notches, strips of animal skin were used as needed. Adam and Eve worked together to weave material to make a thatched roof. They used clay from the nearby stream to caulk the

opening between the logs forming the walls. Inside, they piled straw they had cut in a field nearby to form a bed to sleep on. They awoke the morning after spending their first night in their new home and found they were not covered by dew as they often were when sleeping outside without a covering.

One of the first things Adam discovered after leaving the Garden was that certain stones when struck together made a spark. From these sparks, a fire could be started and kindled to warm them and to cook food and heat water for bathing. He had stacked rocks together for a fire pit near where he had begun to build the cabin. He began to try and figure out how to have a fire in the cabin without it smoking up the place. Using a small twig, he began sketching out diagrams in the soft dirt. He came up with a chamber made of rocks with a chimney to draw the smoke up and away from the opening where wood would be used to make a fire. Using other stones, he made a grill he could place pots they had made from clay that were hardened by fire in an oven after being formed.

After experimenting, he discovered how to make a mortar that would bond stones together. Adam had found one type of rock broke apart fairly easy when struck by another harder rock. He began to pulverize the softer rock into a power consistency. Then he added sand from the river bed to the rock powder and then with water stirred it together and made mortar. He rebuilt the fire pit using this mortar between the rocks. After the mortar dried, he was pleased to find the fire pit was quite solid and would hold together very well. Now, he was ready to build a fireplace in the cabin.

Adam had left openings in the walls to let light in and for a doorway to go in and out. These openings had animal skin drapes that could be used to close up the cabin at night. Another opening had been left in the side at the base of a wall that Adam would use

The Beginning of the Beginning

for the fireplace. They began to carry rocks to their new home for this purpose. Adam mixed mortar and used it as he fashioned the fireplace. The open end where wood would be placed for the fire and access to the grill extended a foot length into the inner room. The depth of the opening went several feet outside of the cabin where he built a chimney with a top that was a couple of feet above the roofline.

Eve had discovered that she could take clay from the soil near the banks of a stream and use it to form bowls and pots that when dried in an oven by the heat of a fire became hard and durable. She and Adam made bricks of clay and straw and then used them to make an oven to bake things and to line the fireplace. Eve separated the grain from stalks of plants Adam remembered calling barley, wheat, rye, and oats. Using oil from animal fat and some milk, she was able to bake loaves of bread. The angels further taught about which seeds, nuts, and fruit from various plants they had never seen before that grew wild and were good for food.

After having made a couple of little patches for gardens, Adam wanted to expand this to several acres near a stream where they could water the plants so they would grow quickly. Adam made a plow from some hard wood that he shaped and fastened together with wooden pegs and leather strips. He then made a leather harness to attach the plow to an ox so he could till the ground for planting.

Adam found several oxen that were gentle but got tired of having to search the countryside to find them. So, he built pens and fences to keep these animals nearby. Adam spent his mornings gathering food and each afternoon he began building other buildings to store crops, feed, and other things he did not want to keep outside or in the cabin used for living. Just like he did before, he cut down trees and shaped them into logs. Then he notched the ends so

alternate logs could form corners. This time he wanted to use a chisel he had made out of stone as well as various hammers he also made of stone and wood. With a knife, chisel, hammer, and axe he developed a method he could drill holes and then drive pegs in to hold two pieces together. He built a building that he could use to hold animals as well as hay and grains he used to feed them when the livestock could not go out to eat grass in the fields. These buildings he called barns.

As the months passed, Eve noticed her belly was growing large and then she felt a movement inside her. She put Adam's hand on her belly and he felt it move. They realized that she was carrying their first child. After she had carried the child for nine months, early one morning Eve began to cry out in pain. Water then flowed from her and the time was at hand for a new life to be born. Adam felt helpless as Eve moaned and then panted between strong contractions. Finally, Adam took the head and then the body of the infant as it came forth. As Yeshua had taught him what seemed like ages before, he tied off the umbilical cord and wrapped his son in the soft skin blanket Eve had specially prepared for this event. He called the infant, Cain, his firstborn son. In thanks to Elohim for this blessing, he built an altar made out of stone and sacrificed a lamb. As the offering began to burn, a fire came down from heaven and completely consumed the meat and wood leaving only the stone altar. Adam knew that Yeshua was pleased with his offering.

Years passed quickly by and the family grew. A second son was born about a year after Cain and this one they named Abel. The next were twin girls who looked like Eve. As time passed, more sons and daughters were born; quite often, the children born to Eve were twins.

The Beginning of the Beginning

The sons and daughters of Adam and Eve were playmates in their youth but as they grew to adulthood, they paired off to form couples. A couple would come to Adam and Eve and pledge their love and devotion to each other and before everyone in their extended family they would be proclaimed as man and wife. Then they would go out and build a home of their own and begin their own family. After the children of Adam and Eve had become parents themselves, their children married the children of other couples. No longer was it necessary for brother and sister to marry. First and then second cousins married and soon there seemed to be no direct family ties to the pairings of man and wife. The number of people accelerated geometrically to hundreds then thousands of men and women during the first couple hundred years after Adam and Eve were driven out of the Garden.

Chapter 28

Harvest Time Sacrifices to Elohim

Before going further into the way, the population grew, there were things that happened that shaped the lives of many generations. In particular, the story of Adam and Eve's first two sons concerns a tragedy that nearly broke the heart and spirit of Adam and Eve. The first two sons of Adam seemed different from all the others that followed. Both wanted to get out of their parent's dwelling and into their own as soon as possible. Each chose at a very early age, what they wanted to do to make a living.

Cain's vocation was in farming the land and soon he had cultivated several large gardens full of healthy vegetables and luscious fruit. He had the proverbial 'green thumb' as everything he planted grew amazingly fast producing both size and quality unmatched by others that tried their hand at farming. He traded his goods with his parents and siblings for things they made and he wanted such as furnishings and clothing. If the others did not have anything he wanted at the time, he would make them promise to give him something he needed or wanted later. His sibling called him 'stingy' behind his back but were otherwise very careful in front of him as they knew he had a terrible temper when he was angry.

Abel's choice was to raise livestock. He gathered many different species and tended them with loving care. Soon, he shepherded large flocks of sheep, goats, and even oxen. He raised his herds for both meat and milk. He also had fenced yards that held various feathered poultry for eggs and meat. He tamed horses to pull wagons he had designed. He even trained horses and oxen to pull a plow and gave them to Cain as a present. He used pigs to consume

scraps and to kill and keep poisonous snakes away from homes and fields. He traded with the others for things he needed. Many times, if the others did not have anything to exchange with him, he went ahead and gave them the meat, eggs, and milk they needed anyway without charge telling them to pay him whatever they could, when they were able.

One of Adam's daughters, Mina, grew very fond of Cain and followed him around trying to help him but often got in his way. He fussed at her and yelled at times but inwardly began to like her companionship when he was not too busy working the fields. She would bring him water and some food at midday and they would eat together under the shade of a tree. It did not seem to matter to her what he said or did, she loved him anyway.

Adam had taught each of his children about Elohim and what was right and wrong. He chided Cain for not sharing like his brother Abel when someone needed vegetables that he raised but did not immediately have something he wanted to trade for it. Adam also taught the children to offer sacrifices to Elohim. One type of sacrifice was for when they did something wrong. It was to be a blood sacrifice requiring the death of a lamb or goat placed on an altar made of stone and then burned completely up with fire. The second kind of sacrifice was that of thanksgiving to Elohim for the blessings they received such as a fine harvest or increase in the flocks in the fall before the weather turned cold. They were to bring the very best of their increase, the first fruit from the land and livestock and offer it on an altar to Elohim.

As years passed, Cain and Abel had grown to become strong young men. Then one year at the time of the fall harvest, the day came for the sacrifice of thanksgiving when things happened that would forever change the lives of all that had been born to Adam and

The Beginning of the Beginning

Eve. Until this year, Adam had offered the sacrifices for everyone on an old altar he rebuilt from time to time. This year each of his two oldest sons would build and offer sacrifices on their own altars.

Cain went through his garden and gathered vegetables and fruit and placed them in a basket. He kept looking about as he gathered to see if anyone could see what he was doing. He had sent Mina off to do some things for him so she would not be there trying to tell him which vegetables to pick for the offering. As he walked along, he saw several very large and beautiful pieces of vegetables. He started to pick them but hesitated. These would be great to set aside for seeds for the next crop. After all, what he picked was just going to be burned up and no one would benefit from that. Therefore, he left the best and instead picked some others that were not quite as good. Shortly afterwards, Mina returned and helped him carry what he had picked from his crop to where he would build an altar.

Abel also went among his flocks to find one for the sacrifice. Finally, he saw a young yearling lamb that was without any blemish. It had the most beautiful white wool and was happily playing and jumping about with the other young sheep. His eyes swept over the other animals and he sighed. This is the one I must sacrifice, he thought, it is the best of all my livestock. I will give it as a burnt offering to my Elohim.

In an area that was near the center of all the family dwellings, Adam and his two oldest sons, built altars where they would offer sacrifices. Adam repaired the altar he had previously built and was first to offer his sacrifice and everyone saw the flames of the fire rise straight upward into the sky. Cain and Abel built their altars nearby and began preparation for the sacrifice. Both piled wood into a pit formed by the stones. Then they placed wood across it to hold the offering.

Adam looked on and saw that Cain had peeled the coverings off the vegetables and had made a nice high pile that was ripe and colorful. When Cain looked about and saw his father watching, he smiled as he saw his father nodding his head in approval. Then Adam saw his other son, Abel, hold up the small lamb and cut the carotid arteries of its throat. He held it up to drain the blood onto the altar. Tears flowed from his eyes as he lovingly stroked the little lamb, which made no sound and faded into the sleep of death. He was so intent in his preparation that he did not notice the disgusting look on Cain's face or the sad look on Adam's face as he dressed out the lamb and placed the remains on the altar.

Cain finished preparing his sacrifice before Abel and he took a torch and began lighting the wood under the altar. The kindling slowly began to flame up, but when the fire spread to the vegetables, it began to smolder and go out. He tried to relight it several times, cursing under his breath at the aggravation of the whole ritual. Finally, the fire caught on but instead of rising into the air, suddenly the flames flashed out toward Cain and he had to jump back in order to not be burned.

Something odd was taking place. It seemed like the fire was alive and the flames flashed out toward him anytime he drew close to the altar from any direction and regardless of what direction the wind was blowing. Cain walked about the altar keeping a safe distance as he muttered words no one could hear but knew by his expression were words he should not ever speak aloud. Soon, all who had gathered in the clearing to see the sacrifices saw that Cain's fire did not blaze anything like his father's sacrifice had done. The flames mainly stayed low and smoke belched out hiding the entire altar at times. As he continued muttering curses, Cain would not look toward his father but his glance was often directed toward Abel.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Abel had not noticed what was happening to Cain's sacrifice. His full attention was on his altar and the slain lamb that was on it. Finally, after a short prayer and a sigh, he took a torch and touched the wood under the lamb that was being sacrificed. The altar was covered with blood that dripped onto the wood. He did not have time to wonder if it would kindle into a flame as the fire swept across the wood. He stepped back and dropped the torch as the fire roared and a great flame ascended straight upward toward the sky. Without thinking, Abel was so full of amazement he raised his hands toward heaven and began to thank Elohim and sing praises to Elohim.

Adam was also so filled with awe when he saw the flame rise up from Abel's offering that he ran to his son, Abel. He wrapped his arms about him and together they thanked Elohim for His great blessings. Cain watched from a distance at them and the fire of Abel's offering continuing to rise into the sky. He turned to his own and saw the fire smoldering and slowing going out again not only not kindling the rest of the wood under the offering but hardly singeing his offering of vegetables and fruit. He tried to stoke and rekindle the fire but every effort failed to get a continuous fire going.

At this time, Adam and Abel came over to him to see if they could help him. He cursed at them and told them to leave him alone. He swore that he must have gotten some green wood and the juices from the vegetables and fruit must have kept the wood from burning. They drew off at a safe distance for a little while as Cain threw kindling and burning torches at the altar cursing it for not burning. Unable to help, they began to realize that standing there watching Cain was making him even angrier. Therefore, they decided it might be best if they left and gave Cain some privacy. They went to Adam's dwelling where they drank some cold water and talked about the sacrifices and what the fire had meant.

After they had gone, Cain heard a soft voice speaking, “*Why are you so angry? It is not too late to make things right. If you will bring an offering of the best that you have, it will be respected. Be very careful in your doings. You must resist the anger you feel. If you do not do what is right in one thing, you will do wrong in other things till evil consumes and eventually destroys you.*”

Cain put his hands over his ears and screamed as he shook his head and ran to his dwelling. In the dark, he sat on his bed. A battle raged in his mind. He thought of gathering the best vegetables and fruit and preparing another sacrifice. Then he shook his head trying to stop hearing any voices in his head. He grew even angrier as he thought 'What if the same thing happened again, I'd be an even greater laughing stock of the family.' Darkness fell and for the longest time he just sat in his house. Alone, upset, he tried his best to block out everything that had happened that day. When he finally nodded off in sleep, it was very troubled. While in another dwelling, his younger brother was sleeping peacefully for the last time before he would be the first mortal to die.

Chapter 29

The Murder of Abel

The next day, Abel was on a hillside watching over his sheep as they grazed. He saw Cain walking along a path heading toward a field he had just started cultivating. Abel could tell that just like the previous evening his older brother was still very upset. Abel loved his brother and really felt sorry for him. He did not know what had gone wrong with Cain's offering but that did not stop him from caring about him.

Abel rose from where he sat and began to follow Cain at a distance. He stopped under a large tree and sat down in the shade. He watched as Cain began prodding the soil with a sharp stick and then digging and removing the large rocks he found so he could further cultivate the land and not chance breaking his plow by hitting a rock while turning the soil over. Abel could see the sweat dripping off Cain's face and arms as he worked very hard. After watching for over an hour, he decided to offer Cain some cool water as he saw Cain had not brought any with him to drink while he worked the field.

"Hey, Cain," Abel called, "How are you doing? I have some cold water if you want a drink. Come on, sit down, and cool off in the shade under this tree over here. It sure is cooler than being in the sun."

Cain did not look in Abel's direction but at the trees in all directions around his field. Then he grunted as he stopped his work and tried to wipe the sweat out of his eyes smearing dirt across his forehead. He dropped his stick and walked up to the tree where Abel

was sitting that was just above his garden area. Cain plopped down, let out a groan, and then stretched. Again, Abel offered the water skin to Cain. After a few minutes, Cain finally took it and took a long pull of water.

"Thanks," he said wiping the dripping water off his chin. Then he looked at the water skin and remarked, "Wow, this is really cold. How did you get it so cold?"

"I know where there is a spring and the water comes out of the ground real cold," Abel answered, "I keep several water skins down in the water there and get them when I want a cold drink. Also, when you leave the skin soaking wet any breeze that blows somehow keeps the water inside cool for several hours."

Abel just sat there leaning against the large tree, relaxed, seemingly very content with a big smile as his mind drifted across several memories that made him happy. As Cain watched Abel's face with his peripheral vision, the smile rekindled his anger. 'He's smiling and taunting me because his fire was bigger than mine' he thought. He turned fully around and stared angrily at Abel.

"What are you smiling about?" snarled Cain.

"Why nothing in particular," Abel replied, "just enjoying the shade and breeze here."

"You are laughing about what happened to my sacrifice yesterday," Cain accused.

"Why no, I forgot all about that," Abel answered.

"So, you and father didn't say a word about it?" he challenged.

The Beginning of the Beginning

"Well, I guess we did talk about it some," Abel ventured cautiously, "Mainly it was father talking and me listening."

"What did father say?" he said as he moved a bit closer to Abel.

"Well, father said that if Elohim accepts your sacrifice then the fire kindles very large and shoots upward into the sky," Abel answered.

"So, you think Elohim didn't accept my sacrifice?" Cain demanded.

"I don't really know," Abel said as the smile left his face and he began to sit up little straighter as he began to realize that he was in a dangerous situation.

"You think Elohim liked your sacrifice and didn't like mine?" Cain's words were spit out as his anger was slowly growing out of control.

"What Elohim likes or does not like is His business and it does not matter what I think," Abel retorted. He silently began to pray.

"Why wouldn't Elohim accept my sacrifice?" Cain argued.

"If it was the best you had to offer then, Uh, Oh, Cain, I simply don't know why Elohim..." Abel stammered as Cain got up on his knees.

"What makes you think it wasn't the best?" Cain questioned as he was now within arm's length of Abel and was slowly drawing

even closer, "Were you out near my garden watching me? Have you been spying on me?"

"No, no, Cain," Abel protested, "I never spy on you or watch what you are doing."

"So, nothing I do is important, huh?" Cain asked as they were nearly face to face. Abel saw a strange look on his brother's face that he had never seen before. Cain reached down to the ground to steady himself and his hand felt something on the ground next to Abel. Cain shouted, "Well, well? So, nothing I do is important? Answer me!"

"No, I mean yes, no, I don't know what to say...:" Abel blurted out.

Abel saw with horror out of the corner of his eyes a hand sweeping toward him that held a large rock. He was not able to move in time to avoid being struck. The rock in Cain's hand smashed into Abel's skull and instantly knocked him unconscious. As Abel fell over, Cain went berserk and he screamed at Abel. "This is what I think about your sacrifice!" His hand swept upward and then downward with the rock as he battered Abel's soon lifeless body on the side of his head, shoulders, and arms. Cain continued to rant, "You like blood so much, here's some more blood. Elohim likes blood so here is my sacrifice of blood!" He continued to pound Abel with the rock as he screamed about 'blood' and 'Elohim' and nonsensical words in total uncontrollable rage.

Finally, Cain came to his senses and stopped. Then he stood up and looked down upon his brother's lifeless body. The side of Abel's head was caved in and blood was splattered everywhere from the repeated blows with the rock. As Cain looked down, he saw his

The Beginning of the Beginning

hands were covered with blood and there was blood spattered all over the front of his clothing. He dropped to his knees in shock. Then his senses began to return as he looked about to see if anyone had seen what had happened. He lifted the lifeless body onto his left shoulder and carried it to the top of a nearby hill. He continued to the edge of a high cliff and tossed the body of Abel over it. There, he thought, if anyone finds him, they will think he fell while looking for his precious sheep.

He stopped by a brook and washed the blood from his hands and body and buried his clothes behind his dwelling. Realizing that he was hungry, he went in, put on some clothes, and prepared some food. However, he could only force down a few bites as he sat stunned as his mind went over the details of the horrible thing he had done. He felt depressed, sad, and very tired. Carrying that body to the top of that cliff was harder work than he expected; so, he decided to take a nap. He was finally able to escape his thoughts but his dreams were chaotic and he tossed and turned as a vivid nightmare of blood and gore vexed his very being.

Someone banging on the door awakened him. He got up and groggily opened it to find one of his sisters ten years younger than himself standing there.

"Hey, Cain, have you seen Abel?" she asked.

"No, I haven't seen him since yesterday," Cain responded sounding as if he were in a drunken stupor.

"Wow, yesterday your sacrifice was a disaster," she chided and giggled.

"I'll disaster you! Don't ever mention that again!" he snarled as he feigned a swing of his fist at her.

"Oh, sorry," she ducked as she instantly jumped off the porch avoiding his blow, "just kidding. Didn't mean to make you mad."

"Go on, get outta here!" he yelled as he slammed the door.

He was not able nor did he really want to go back to sleep. He guessed he had only slept a couple of hours all night. He decided to go out to one of his gardens he had planted several weeks before. It was down a different path and far from where he had confronted Abel. After arriving there, he was soon busy hoeing and pulling weeds from around the new sprouts from seeds he had planted. He had worked up quite a sweat when Mina, came by.

"Hey, Cain," she called from the edge of the garden, "Have you seen Abel anywhere?"

"No, no, no, and again no," he shouted at her, "leave me alone. I don't babysit him or anybody else."

Mina did not say another word and left him quickly. Ever since Cain's offering had not flamed up as Abel's, she had kept her distance for she knew that when he was really angry he would take it out on anyone near him until he fully got over whatever had caused his anger.

Alone in his garden, Cain's anger made him work even harder until he heard that voice again that had spoken to him the previous day, "*Cain, where is your brother, Abel?*"

The Beginning of the Beginning

He angrily screamed, "I told you I don't know. I'm not my brother's keeper? Just leave me alone!"

The voice grew much louder and resounded, "*What have you done?*" Cain at first froze as he began to realize that maybe Elohim was talking to him and had seen what he had done. He threw down the hoe and ran from the garden to the shade of a nearby tree.

"I must be having a heat stroke," he tried to reason; "I must be going out of my mind."

Again, the voice called to him, "*The voice of your brother's blood cries out to me from the ground.*"

Cain could hardly breathe. He gasped and looked around hoping to see a person accusing him of his crime. In terror, he finally had to admit to himself that it was Elohim who was condemning him.

The voice of Elohim proclaimed judgment for Cain's sin, "*Now you are cursed from the ground which has drunk of your brother's blood which you have shed. This same ground, which you love to till, shall no longer yield its generous harvest to you. From this day, you will be a fugitive and a vagabond!*"

Cain fell to his knees tormented not for his evil deed so much as for the pronouncement from Elohim of the specific punishment for his crime. He had always enjoyed, no that was not it, he loved cultivating the land and seeing crops grow to harvest. As he realized the part of his life that he most cherished was being taken from him, He cried out, "I cannot bear my punishment. Tilling the ground is the joy of my life and now you have cursed me from ever reaping the harvest of the ground again. You have set your face and all the forces

of nature against me. Even now I must flee as a fugitive and live as a vagabond for all who learn of my crime will seek to kill me."

Elohim replied to Cain, *"No, your life will not end so swiftly. I will warn all others to not kill you or they will face my vengeance seven-fold."* Then Elohim's finger drew a mark on Cain's forehead **13**.

Cain cried out in pain as his forehead burned from the touch of Elohim. He ran to a nearby stream and dove in to try to quench the fire he thought was still burning. He stood up and saw the reflection of his face in the water. Something like a squiggly line, a snake, ran from the hairline on the left of his face to the eyebrow above his right eye on his forehead. He then ran to his dwelling and quickly packed some of his belongings that he could carry and started out the door. He was met by Mina and another of his younger sisters.

Mina began asking, "Can you help us as we search for Abel."

As the light from the doorway fell on Cain the younger one shrieked, "Oh! What is that terrible scar on your face?"

"Oh Cain!" Mina also cried out with concern, "Are you hurt?"

Cain had intended to storm his way out of his house but he stopped on the porch and then dropped onto a bench by the doorway and for the first time in his life, he began to cry. The younger sister had started to run away as everyone knew how violent Cain could be when angry but she stopped and stared at this spectacle that seemed so unreal. Mina sat down beside Cain on the bench trying to think of something to say that would comfort and not upset him. Then Cain started talking.

The Beginning of the Beginning

"Yes, I have seen our brother Abel," Cain finally admitted as he struggled to hold back his sobs, "he's lying dead at the base of the cliff just beyond my northernmost garden."

"Oh no, he must have fallen!" the younger cried out.

"If only that were so," Cain's head was bowed, his face held in his two strong hands and his voice was filled with pain, "No, he did not fall. We were talking about the sacrifices and I got angry with him. The more we talked the madder I became. I don't know what happened. I, I, I just went crazy and when I came to my senses I was standing over Abel with a rock in my hand. His head was covered in blood. The stone was covered in blood. My hands, my clothes, blood, blood everywhere. Then I carried Abel's body and then I threw his body off the cliff trying to make it look like an accident."

The younger sister had begun to cry as she listened to Cain's confession. As the full impact of Abel's death hit her, she screamed in terror and ran off in the direction of their parent's home. As Mina watched her younger sister disappear from sight, she again turned her attention to Cain. While shocked at his evil deed she still could not help caring about him. Cain welcomed Mina's presence but wondered at her still caring about him after what he had done.

"But, Yeshua...Yeshua and Yahweh see everything," he continued. "I have been cursed by Yeshua. He has condemned me to live out my life...the ground...the ground that I have so dearly love will no longer respond to my planting. He wants me to suffer for what I did and will not allow my life to end quickly. He marked me and if anyone tries to kill me, Yeshua will bring a terrible wrath upon his house. I must leave now and flee from my kindred. I am now a fugitive and will spend the rest of my life as an outcast from

our family. To wander as a vagabond across the face of the Earth despised by all who see this mark on my face. I am not even going to have the mercy of dying soon by the hands of others as Yeshua has foresworn that if anyone kills me they will be punished seven-fold."

Mina put her hand on Cain's shoulder. His head turned as he looked into her eyes he was shocked by her question, "Must you go alone?"

Bewildered, Cain responded, "Yeshua did not say. I know I have done a terrible evil and I will have to bear my punishment for the rest of my life."

Mina responded, "Then I will go with you."

Cain's look changed to amazement and his voice cracked as he asked, "You want to go with me? A murderer, a fugitive, a vagabond? I cannot ask you to live such a life."

"You are not asking," She softly responded, "I want to be with you for better or for worse. If you will have me."

Cain took her hand and looked deeply into her eyes and spoke softly, "Then, you are no longer my sister. You will be my wife till death do us part. I must leave a message for Father. It will tell him of this horrible thing that I have done. Telling him I am sorry would never be enough, but he must know how Elohim is punishing me. Also, I will tell him that you have volunteered to come with me of your own free will and I am taking you to wife."

"Where will we go?" Mina asked.

The Beginning of the Beginning

"We will head toward the east. I heard Abel..." he stopped and shook his head. A small but real sense of remorse made it hard for him to continue talking so he was silent for a few minutes and then he said, "Abel told me of a land called Nod to the east. He said there were wild animals that could be tamed and thought the ground looked like it could be cultivated. We even talked about us setting up our own homestead so Father would be proud of us. Oh, Abel, why did I get so mad at you? Why were you always such a perfect son who never made mistakes like me?"

Cain stopped talking and then went back into the house and began to pack some more things he needed now that Mina would be going with him. Then he and his wife left his home and began their journey from their family and the life they had lived since birth. Cain's desperation and sorrow were not completely about his evil deed but having to face the initial physical penalty it brought him. He never asked forgiveness of Elohim nor returned to the way of the Elohim of his father, Adam, had taught him.

Chapter 30

The Lineage in Cain's Line

The lineage of Cain grew but not as fast as that of the rest of Adam's children. While both lines occasionally crossed paths, very few from Adam's other sons and daughters joined those of Cain's clan. All had been warned of the curse on Cain for his evil deed. Cain and Mina initially survived by foraging for berries, nuts, and roots and hunting game.

Cain began trying other methods of building shelters rather than just using sticks and logs. He remembered how his mother, Eve, had taught him how to make bricks with clay and straw. Using this technique, he used bricks for his buildings and they were much larger than those of his childhood were. He also chopped down large trees and split and hewed them into beams and planks like his father, Adam had taught him.

Yeshua had mercy on Cain and in time, his wife presented him with a son he named Enoch. As a few others ventured into the land of Nod, Cain traded his labor building them homes and other buildings for food and clothing and other things his family needed. A city came into being and Cain called the city Enoch after his first born **14**.

Enoch grew to manhood quickly and named his firstborn, Irad. Time passed ever swiftly and Irad presented Cain with a great grandson he named Mehujael. Cain's lineage continued with Mehujael's son named Methusael.

Methusael's son, Lamech, did something that no other man had done to this time. When he reached manhood, Lamech took two women for wives. His first wife, Adah bore him two sons. The first he named, Jabal, who started a clan of tent dwellers that followed flocks across the land rather than fencing them in one place. His second son by Adah, he named Jubal. Jubal discovered how to make and play many new and different musical instruments including the harp and organ. Lamech's second wife, Zillah born him a son he named Tubalcain. This son became well known far and wide for discovering how to mine ore and refine its metal. Works of brass and iron became his trademark. Zillah also bore him a daughter whom Lamech named Naamah.

Lamech was a hard and violent man much like his great-great grandfather, Cain. He would often lose his self-control when dealing with others. Whenever there was tough bargaining going on, fights would break out and Lamech was always the last man standing having left the others beaten and bloody. On one occasion, a man stabbed him in his back with a knife. Though it went deep and wounded him, it was not severe enough to stop Lamech. Lamech fought with him, pinned him to the ground, and strangled him to death with his bare hands. He was not able to reach the knife stuck in his back. He walked two miles back to his home, had Zillah pull the knife from his back, and dress the wound.

He recovered quickly, but did not forget the lesson. He made thicker clothing of animal skins around his torso. He also made a shield of wood and skins and carried the knife he had been stabbed with. Sometimes, he carried a spear, but most of the time he wanted his hands free so the thick skins and his knife were his main protection and armament. His brute strength and fierce rage made him more than a match for any man he faced, even bare handed.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Nearly a year later, one of his many enemies who had suffered numerous beatings decided get even with Lamech. He was no match to take on Lamech even with any weapon he knew how to use in direct hand-to-hand combat. However, he carefully planned an ambush. He would use a bow and arrows, so he would not have to get too close to Lamech and chance being killed. He waited for an opportunity and one day saw Lamech leaving his home to go into town.

The young man cut across a wooded hill and got ready to ambush Lamech. Just as Lamech came around a bend in the trail, the young man let go of an arrow but misjudged the movement of Lamech's body, as his arms swung back and forth while he took long strides. Lamech's left shoulder swung forward and the arrow struck it missing his chest. The arrow had a sharp stone point and had pierced his skin through the thick covering he wore and Lamech jumped behind a tree and tried to tear the arrow from his shoulder. He was only able to break off its shaft. Several more arrows rained down on him, but failed to strike Lamech.

Once Lamech saw that he had only one adversary and exactly where his attacker was standing, he charged up the hill dipping and swerving making him a hard target to hit. He was hit by another arrow and then another. Both had passed through the tough skins that provided Lamech's body armor. Lamech fell down behind a tree. The arrows did not just sting, they really hurt, but nothing would stop him. Lamech broke off the shafts of two more arrows. He felt the warm blood spreading from where the tip of the arrows remained.

In a mindless animalistic rage, he again charged up the hill roaring like a wild animal oblivious to the arrows that sailed around him. Lamech reached the young man and leaped upon him tackling

him to the ground. He then used the knife he had taken from his first victim and began stabbing him repeatedly. Finally, he swung the knife to cut the jugulars in the man's throat and nearly cut his head off. He rose from the bloody corpse and smiled. As blood dripped down his face passing his lips where it had splattered, he licked it with his tongue and laughed.

Then He took the bow and noticed that the quiver held one last arrow. As the adrenaline slowly stopped, he again began to feel the pain from where the three arrows were still sticking in his body. They had gone deep. He again tried to pull them out but was not able. He began to feel a bit weaker but with his strong will driving him, he was able to make his way back to his home. Upon entering his house, he went straight to his bed and collapsed onto it as he lost consciousness. His wives rushed to him. They saw the blood on his clothing and went to work cutting it off. They found the broken shafts of the arrow sticking out from his body. While Lamech remained passed out, Zillah cut out the arrowheads with a sharp knife and patched him up.

Within a couple of weeks, Lamech was up and hardly showed any ill effect from the arrows. The word of his strength and resilience grew ever greater. From that time on, no one else tried to fight or ambush him again. Lamech never felt any guilt or showed any remorse for killing other men. In fact, he actually bragged about it. 'Yeshua was either too far off to see or maybe He did not even exist,' Lamech thought and regardless it did not matter to him.

He enjoyed saying to his family, "Hear my voice; you wives of Lamech, hearken unto my speech: for I have slain a man to my wounding and a young man to my hurt. If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold."**15**

Part Six: From Seth to Noah

Chapter 31

The Lineage from Seth

Adam and Eve had grieved sorely over the death of their second son Abel and the plight of their first son Cain who had murdered him. While they had other sons and daughters, none were as special to them as Abel had been during his short life. To soften their pain Yeshua gave them another son whom they called Seth. As Seth matured, they noticed that His appearance grew to be almost identical as they remembered how Abel had looked before his untimely death. What was even more startling being how his behavior and mannerism were also nearly identical to Abel. It was almost as if Abel had never been killed. Every day they thanked Elohim for giving them Seth in place of Abel and particularly because he continued to follow the way of Yeshua more so than all the rest of their children. These truths, Seth passed on to his first-born son, Enos, who would pass them down to his firstborn son.

All deeds of the generations of man from Adam to Moses were passed down from fathers and mothers to their children mainly by word of mouth. The written word was known and it was used to send messages or record significant events. Such writings done on surfaces made of fiber materials or animal skins were not carefully preserved and faded out after a few hundred years. Writings made on stone, though worn by weather, often lasted for many thousands of years.

All mankind spread out and became separate nations from that first family unit of Adam and Eve. As the years passed, the separate nations modified the stories they heard with embellishments that suited their lineage, but all shared many of the same basic events in

their own version of history. The lineage of each family group was primarily based on the first-born son of each man. While each couple from Adam and Eve down through the years were composed of many other sons and daughters, most of their names were briefly if not left completely out of their orally passed on historic records. The stories passed down by the various families that became nations from generation to generation that spread throughout the entire world became the source of legends and myths and even the religions of men in later generations.

As several thousand years passed by, the life expectancy of mankind was often hundreds of years and in some cases nearly one thousand years such as the age of Enoch's son, Methuselah, who died after attaining the age of 969 years. What few people realize is there was an overlap sometimes of hundreds of years wherein many generations coexisted. Adam lived 930 years and many of each generation would take their children with them as they went to see and talk with the father of all living.

Throughout his entire life, Adam's mind was always very sharp and he could remember the names of every first-born son down to Noah's father Lamech (not to be mistaken for one of Cain's descendants.) Adam died just over 50 years after Lamech was born. There was something very special about the first-born sons of Seth's line. It was as if each one dedicated his heart and soul to serve and obey the way of YESHUA and pass this on to their children. Each generation of the firstborn strived to remember and teach to others many things that were done by those faithful to Yeshua. This was not so with the other children. Practically all of them began to believe fables and myths rather than the truths of Yeshua.

Each year in the fall, a tradition developed in which Adam and all the first-born sons from Seth's lineage met together. For seven

The Beginning of the Beginning

days, they feasted together telling each other of stories from creation onward, rehearsing as it were, to help ensure the story would never be forgotten. On the eighth day, they met for one last meal and gathering before returning to their separate homes and families. Over the years, fewer and fewer of their sons and daughters with their families journeyed to meet together with them for this occasion as they moved into new lands farther away.

With the birth of Seth's first son, Enos, a shift in the attitudes of the general population became much more pronounced. More and more were thinking, acting, and dwelling on evil to the extent it was becoming continuous. Mankind lost their fear of Elohim; they went so far as to call out His Name with flagrant disrespect and vulgarities. Only the first-born sons of Adam's lineage through Seth stood out as the exception. They persevered as Godly men, who tried to teach and warn others of the terrible consequences of disobedience to the way of Yeshua. They tried to teach others the way of laws that were equitable, fair, and even how to make retribution for wrongs to others and to their Elohim. Enos' first-born son was named Cainan. Cainan's first-born son was named Mahalaleel. Mahalaleel's first-born son was named Jared.

Jared's first-born son, Enoch, grew to become a remarkable man and left a unique mark in the annals of history. Enoch's favorite pastime was visiting with others of Adam's lineage. Because of their longevity, practically everyone who had been born after Abel was still alive when Enoch was young.

However, things were changing ever more rapidly. Skirmishes among the various clans were gradually escalating. Perversions that had been whispered shamefully in the dark before he was born were becoming not only more openly tolerated but also beginning to be practiced shamelessly in the light of day. Enoch trembled at the

yearly fall get together as he heard Adam tell of the wondrous power of Yeshua and how He might use His power to curse those who did evil after the way of Cain.

When Enoch was sixty-five, he had an epiphany just after his first-born son, Methuselah was born. He had a vivid dream from Elohim in which he saw ‘the end of the world’ happening just after the death of his son. In his dream, he saw the wickedness of mankind reach such depraved depths that Elohim cursed the day He created man. From that time, Enoch’s life changed as he began what he felt was his life’s mission.

While He always insured that his family had everything they needed, he left them for weeks at a time. He had begun to travel widely, trying to seek out every living person, striving with all his strength and might to get them to return to the way of Yeshua. He was a zealot and offended many by his cries of alarm at the evil ways that were becoming more profane with each passing year.

Returning from a journey Enoch was summoned along with the other first-born sons to the bedside of the human father of all living, Adam, who had celebrated the 930th anniversary of his creation by Yeshua only a few months before. A vigil had begun and each night one of the first-born sons knelt by his bedside rendering prayers to Yeshua whose first-born son, Adam was soon to lay down his mortal life. Each took their turn as Seth, Enos, Cainan, Mahalaleel, Jared, Enoch, Methuselah, and the youngest, Methuselah’s son, Lamech carried on the vigil.

On the eighth night, during Lamech’s turn to watch over and pray for Adam, he saw that Adam’s breath had become very shallow indicating that he was very close to dying and he summoned the rest. They were all gathered about when Adam opened his eyes and

The Beginning of the Beginning

looked at each one of them and smiled. Then Adam looked upward and his smile grew even greater and his eyes sparkled with joy. He raised his right hand as if to take another's hand and then fell limp as his last breath expired. While it was a time for great sorrow as all mourned their loss, the first-born sons faithfully assured each other that they would see him again in the fullness of time as Yeshua had taught them.

While Adam's first-born lineage was busy with his funeral, another group of men gathered together and conspired to end the outcries of Enoch that had troubled their families and friends for nearly three hundred years. Their plan was to secretly go to a valley between two mountain ranges and lay in wait to ambush Enoch. They had found out that he was planning another journey toward their homeland where he would again shout the ways of Elohim and for all to repent and turn from evil.

Finally, the day came when spies sent word that they had seen Enoch depart his home city. The messengers swiftly rode on horseback to the camp of the conspirators giving them enough time to set up the ambush. Just about noon, Enoch entered the valley walking while leading a pack animal that carried his provisions for his trip. Suddenly, a horn blasted and over three hundred armed men charged down the slopes toward Enoch. As they closed, they were surprised to see that he did not run or try to get away.

When they were about one hundred yards from him, they saw him smile and look up. He was not looking at them but at something, they could not see high above their heads. They saw his lips moving but could not hear what he was saying for all the noise. Suddenly, they all stopped dead in their tracks totally astonished by an unbelievable sight. Enoch began to rise above the ground as if he

had wings and was somehow transported into the sky above them and disappeared from their sight in the clouds.

Confused and outraged that Enoch had escaped their trap, they all scattered about searching for him. They assumed he would come back down to Earth and they tried to find where he would land. Their search was in vain. Word began to spread as family and friends of Enoch wondered what had happened to Enoch as he had not returned from his latest journey and had sent no letter explaining his delay to his family. The conspirators made up all kinds of stories of how he had been killed by wild animals or robbers on his last journey. Strangely, none of the conspirators wanted to claim responsibility for causing his death even though they had all called him a troublemaker.

What the conspirators did not realize was there had been another eyewitness to the events that took place during the ambush. Enoch's son, Methuselah had also had a vision from Elohim just before Enoch's last journey. In the vision, he had stood high above and watched as his father was attacked. When he awoke, he begged his father to let him go with him on this journey. Enoch refused him but comforted him by telling him that Yeshua would sustain his life as long as he served Him faithfully.

Unknown to Enoch, Methuselah carefully followed his father on the journey. He followed the high ridges far above the paths that went along the low-lying areas. High on the side of a mountain that fateful day when the sun rose to its zenith, he saw a hoard of evil men lying in ambush below him. Just beyond them, he could barely make out in the distance his father steadily walking along the path in the valley below.

The Beginning of the Beginning

He wanted to cry out a warning but a soft quite voice told him to remain silent and see the hand of Yeshua move to protect this man who was faithful to Him. The ambush failed as somehow Enoch began to rise into the air. Just before Enoch passed into the clouds, he reached the level where Methuselah was standing on the mountainside. Enoch saw his son standing there and he shook his head as he saw that Methuselah had not stayed home as he instructed. Then he smiled and waved to him and then pointed upward toward heaven. Both men were assured by faith that in the fullness of time they would see each other again.

As soon as Enoch disappeared in the clouds, Methuselah began to backtrack and returned home on a long route that kept clear of the search parties. It took quite some time to reach his home city. When he arrived there, he found a gathering of all the first-born sons as they had heard that Enoch was missing. The alarm had further intensified as they had discovered that Enoch's son, Methuselah, was also missing. These sons gathered in the home of Jared, trying to sort out what was true in the stories of what had happened. They pondered stories of wild animals and robbers. They wondered what had happened and why had Yeshua allowed such a righteous man as Enoch to fall prey to such an untimely death?

The door opened and all eyes turned in astonishment and a hush quieted the crowd in the house of Jared when they saw Methuselah standing in the doorway. While his face was familiar to them all, there was something about him that had changed. He now appeared older than they remembered and the look on his face reminded everyone of his father, Enoch.

“The stories that you have heard about my father are all lies,” he declared. “I was there when my father departed this world.”

“How did he die?” Mahalaleel asked.

“Did he suffer?” Jared questioned sadly.

“He did not die,” responded Methuselah to their shock.

“Then, where is he?” Seth gasped in relief as the rest also began shouting the question, “Where is he?”

Methuselah raised his hands to get them to quiet down, so he could speak and they could all hear him. He then began to tell what he had witnessed. As he spoke, his voice grew bolder, “I saw him surrounded by a band of thugs who were intent on his death. As they charged down the mountainside to slay him, something miraculous took place. Without any means I could see, my father began to rise into the air. The ambushers just stopped and stood there with their mouths open in astonishment, not believing their eyes at what they saw. I was high on the mountainside where the clouds began to form. I was also astonished at what was taking place. I lost sight of father as he entered some lower clouds, but I quickly climbed higher and then in an opening in the clouds I again saw my father suspended in the air so close I could possibly touch him if I would but run and jump toward him.

Nevertheless, there I stood frozen in wonder. It seemed he had been praying, as he looked upward toward heaven. Then, as he was near my level, he lowered his head, turned, and looked me in the eye. At first, he shook his head at me, probably because I had disobeyed him and followed him when he had told me to remain at home, until he returned. Then he smiled and raised his hand and waved to me and then pointed and looked upward as he continued to rise above the world. I was waving back to him when suddenly, I saw a blinding flash of light brighter than the sun and then I lost sight of him

The Beginning of the Beginning

completely. It took a while before I could see again and when my eyesight returned, I began to make my way back here while avoiding those who had sought to kill my father.”

It seemed like everyone was talking at the same time to each other and to Methuselah, asking for more details of just what he saw and then they all tried to figure out what it meant. Finally, they all held their peace as Seth rose from his chair and began to speak, summing it up for them all.

Seth’s words were heard by all who were there, “Enoch was a friend of Yeshua, perhaps closer than any of us is or ever will be. He was special and perhaps in some other future time he still has a purpose to fulfill in our Great Creator’s plan. Yeshua took him so he would not experience death as all of mankind is subject to since our father Adam sinned and as we have all fallen short of the mark and have sinned as well during our lives. Let us never forget this event. Perhaps one day there will come a time in which all those who are living and truly faithful to our Elohim will not have to experience the pain of death and they will transcend to meet Yeshua in the air as Enoch did.”

So, they all were comforted and did not sorrow for Enoch. In just over a hundred years later, Seth died at the age of 912. Fourteen years after Seth’s death, Methuselah’s son, Lamech announced the birth of his first-born son whom he named Noah. As Noah grew older, his behavior reminded others of Enoch. Both had especially looked forward to the yearly fall gathering to sit and listen to the stories their forefathers told around the campfire each evening. Noah, like Enoch, was exemplary in his devotion to the way of Yeshua. Noah even put off marrying and having a family for hundreds of years, as he felt something ominous on the horizon approaching mankind.

As the years passed, Noah saw one by one the first-born sons from Enos on down began to die. Enos had reached the age of 905. Cainan had reached the age of 910. Mahalaleel reached the age of 895. Noah saw Jared, the father of Enoch, his great great-grandfather become feeble with age and he suddenly felt a stirring in his heart and a sense of urgency to marry and begin a family. Noah took a wife much younger than himself. Then by the time he reached the age of 500 years, their third son was born. When Jared died at the age of 962, Noah, his wife, and their three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth gathered with his father, Lamech and grandfather, Methuselah as they laid Jared to rest. After having dinner together that night, Noah overheard Methuselah telling Lamech again as he had heard him so many times before, “When I die, every creature that draws breath upon the face of the Earth will also die.”

Chapter 32

Noah Leaves His Homeland

From Adam to Noah the Earth grew not only in population but also even more so in evil practices. Cain and his progeny such as Lamech were not the only ones who murdered and killed others. In time, those of Seth's lineage began to kill others when violence seemed to break out everywhere. It reached a point in which no one was surprised when a person was found dead, killed by the hands of another person. Such occasion's fueled feuds and would often start a series of revengeful counter murders among the various clans. Very few followed the way of Yeshua taught to Adam and Eve who then taught their progeny. Perversions slowly grew and became unimaginably wicked. During this time, numerous men grew to great stature and accomplished great feats of strength. Tales spread about them that became the source of myths and legends that were passed down from age to age.

It actually seemed like each generation was trying to surpass the previous one by sinking deeper into evil and perversion throughout the inhabited lands. Groups of people began to separate themselves from others that were different in appearance. Initially it was the very light-haired people who began to draw away from the very dark-haired people. Then the separation became more intense as lighter complexioned people drew apart from those of darker complexion. Anyone born within a group that was different was either killed or cast out.

Three separate groups of people passed down skin tones, facial characteristics, and body shapes and as generations came and went the difference grew more distinct as far as outward features. The

three skin tones were: light skinned, dark skinned, and those with skin tones in-between. The facial features and body size of each group gradually became more distinct. The light skin toned people had high cheekbones and were of average size. The dark-skinned toned people had large foreheads, a flatter nose, and a generally larger stature. Those with skin tones in between light and dark developed what looked like almond shaped eyes and a noticeably smaller stature.

These characteristic appearances grew more distinct as each generation was more selective in their mating. The minds of men were driven by what they saw in the outward appearance of women with little regard for what they were like in their behavior, attitude, and character. As hundreds of years passed, generation after generation formed an ever-increasing diversity between the three groups; they grew further apart, not wanting to share the land or anything else with those of the other two groups. There began armed clashes between the groups and often small settlements of one group on the fringe near another group were raided and everyone was killed by the other group. The tension and hatred between groups continued to grow worse with each passing generation. The intent of the thoughts of nearly everyone was wickedness and every evil perversion they could think of, they not only did but enjoyed seeing others do them as well.

Yet, a very few men of righteousness maintained a continuous chain that passed on the truths Yeshua had taught Adam in the Garden of Eden. After nearly two thousand years, in spite of all the evil rampant throughout the civilized world, the way of Yeshua still flickered as a small flame in a world growing ever darker. Methuselah, his son, Lamech, and his grandson, Noah all too soon were the only men still living that championed this truth. As strife and warfare made travel ever more difficult, these three were no

The Beginning of the Beginning

longer able to meet each year in the fall and even communication between them was becoming less frequent.

Noah continually guided his family with strength and his wife and their three sons honored the way of Yeshua. As it became near impossible for him to keep his family in safety, he decided they needed to leave their homeland in search of a place where his family could dwell in peace and thrive. This took his family farther and farther away from the land where his father and grandfather lived. Noah felt that Yahweh Elohim would show him the way and the place where they should dwell.

They traveled for months ever eastward. Each day they hoped their journey would end. Then one day after traveling till the sun was at its highest point, Noah and his family reached the top of a high mountain pass. From there, they saw a very large uninhabited valley that spread as far as their eyes could see that was surrounded by mountain ranges.

This was the land others along the way had warned them to avoid at all cost. It was said that no one who entered this valley ever came back out alive. There were reports of very large wild beasts that would stalk humans for food. As if that were not enough to dread, there were tales of dangerous serpents with deadly venom that could kill a person with one bite. It was told that the trees were of very hard wood covered with vines. Some said the forest was so thick, that it was impossible to even make a path from one mountain pass through the valley to reach the two other gaps in the mountains on the far sides. As long as anyone could remember, all travelers went over a thousand miles in order to pass around the valley, as a direct route through it would surely end in death.

Noah had prayed to Yeshua for a place his family could live in peace and now, in spite of what they had been told, he felt in his heart that this was the place. On the spot where they had first laid eyes on the valley, he and his sons built an altar of stone and offered a thanksgiving offering to Yeshua. The fire quickly kindled and roared into ball of fire that consumed the offering and then rose high and straight into the sky above them. This confirmed to them that Yeshua was smiling on them and would bless their endeavors in the valley as well as protect them.

After resting and having a feast of celebration after the offering, they rested the remainder of the day. Early the next morning, they began clearing a pathway toward the center of the valley. Cutting a pathway was very difficult and each day the progress was slow. In fact, Noah's sons could hurl a stone a longer distance than how far they progressed from where they began each day to where they stopped. Each week they moved their camp forward. By looked upward toward the mountain peaks they could see where they were and their progress toward the center.

Moving and setting up a campsite took half a day so they had to plan ahead. On the sixth day of each week, they opened up a clearing. Noah and his oldest son, Shem made a barrier of crisscrossed logs they had cut along with branches from torn bushes completely around the clearing. They left an opening that they would roll one of the wagons across and they placed logs against it with torn branches in the cracks. Ham and Japheth took care of breaking camp and packing everything in their wagons. Then at the new site, everyone was involved in unpacking and setting things up for them to live there for another week. For protection, they kept a ring burning each night around their camp that had been made of brush and small limbs they had cut during the day. The next day was the seventh day called the Sabbath and they rested. Noah used this

The Beginning of the Beginning

time to tell of their lineage and the teachings their forefathers all the way to Adam were taught in keeping the way of Yeshua.

When they neared, what they thought was close to the center, Noah and his oldest son went scouting ahead to see what the land was like. They found areas of open meadows and woodland that was not as thick as what they had cut their way through to get to the center. There were several rivers and smaller streams flowing about it. After finding an ideal place to build homes close to streams for water and meadows for livestock, they returned to camp to tell the others. The final pathway was completed to the home site where they made camp on the sixth day of the week and built an altar to offer another thanksgiving offering to Yeshua. The following day, the Sabbath was a day of rejoicing that Elohim had brought them safely to this new homeland.

On their way into the valley they had cut down thousands of tall straight trees. Now they went back up the trail and cut limbs off the fallen trees and cut them into varying lengths they would use to build houses, barns, stables, fences, and other structures on their homestead. They used their wagons to haul shorter logs and had to pull longer logs along the side of the trail so as to not damage the roadway down the middle they would use for the wagons. This went much faster than making the original trail.

It was not long before they had built a great house where all five of them could live in comfort. It was strong to protect them from animals they occasionally heard roaring in the night. Nearly every other day one of them saw a great beast but it was always fifty cubits away from them. When these beasts saw them, the beast ran quickly in the other direction. Elohim had sent His angels to watch over them and to protect them on their journey and in their new homeland.

He had increased the fear of Noah and his family in all creatures of the valley so they were never harmed.

Taking heed of what they had been told, they were initially careful to watch out for snakes, but during the months of working their way into the valley, they never saw any that were dangerous. What they did not know at first but later realized was that Elohim had driven the deadly snakes from the valley to protect them. Along the way, they had trapped and killed some of the large wild animals to use the hide for clothing and material to make things. Most of the very dangerous animals had been guided by Yeshua to live only in the fringe edges of the valley and on the mountainsides far from Noah's family. They fenced some places to hold livestock but most of their livestock was allowed to run free and feed on the abundant grassy meadows. Next, they worked tirelessly to cut down and remove some nearby trees in order to cultivate ever-larger fields to grow crops.

In time, Noah and his sons cleared trails to the other two openings in the mountains that surrounded the valley. They discovered that the valley was central to the three groups formed by the rest of humanity and the three mountain passes lead to a different group. The pass to the south led to the villages of tall dark-skinned people with black curly hair. The pass to the northeast led to the cities of medium shaded small people with almond shaped eyes with very straight black hair. The pass to the west that they had used to entered this place led to the light skinned, wavy fair-haired people. Noah found favor with Yeshua as he and his entire household rejected the perverse lifestyles of the other groups. Yeshua blessed him and he also found favor with the surrounding villages of people of the three groups as well.

The Beginning of the Beginning

It was several years after Noah and his wife and three sons had built their homes and began farming and raising livestock that any of the peoples surrounding the valley ventured beyond the pass. Shem was the first to make contact with the ‘outsiders’ as his family had called those who lived outside of their valley. He had been searching for some missing cattle and was near the pass where his family had first entered the valley. He was riding a horse that was plodding along as he searched the ground for signs of cattle hoof prints. Suddenly, his horse stopped and snorted. Shem looked up and saw three men just ahead on the pathway. He raised his right hand in a universal sign of peace. The three men also raised their right hands. Shem slipped off his horse and walked toward the men.

“Hello,” he said. At that time, there was a universal language but as the three groups had further divided some words began to sound a bit different.

“Hello,” returned one of the men.

“Are you man or spirit?” another one asked.

“A man, no different than you,” Shem replied.

“Where you come from?” the first man asked.

“From down in the valley,” Shem answered pointing toward the center.

Hearing that, the three looked at each other and talked among themselves using strange sounding words for a couple of minutes while casting nervous looks toward Shem.

“We wondered at the fate of those who had entered this valley many years ago,” the third man ventured.

“That was my father and mother, my two brothers and myself,” Shem told them.

“Are any others alive besides yourself?” the first asked.

“We are all alive and doing very well,” Shem announced and added, “We have built homes and barns and have a large farm and raise livestock. The reason I am here is I was searching for some stray cattle.”

“How is it possible for you to have survived this most dreadful place?” the second man asked.

“Our Elohim, Yahweh, has protected us and blessed all that we have done. By His goodness we prosper,” Shem proclaimed.

As they continued to talk, Shem heard the sound of a cow as it mooed nearby. He asked them to wait until he returned. They said they would. He slipped back on his horse and rode off at a gallop. In a few minutes, he returned with a large steer being led by a rope. When he reached the men, he handed the rope to one of them and told them it was a gift from his family to them. They were overwhelmed by his generosity and profusely thanked him over and over, as he told them he had to leave and drive the other cattle back to the meadows in the valley below.

When he returned home, he told his father of all that had happened. His father thought about it and gathered his family together.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“The people who live outside our valley will become curious about us now that they will learn that we have survived. We know that their lives are difficult and finding or even growing food for them is very difficult. I feel we should share our bounty with them. Our barns and bins are starting to overflow. Rather than have this food spoil and waste let us take this excess to the three mountain passes and leave it there for others to find. This will be an offering of peace between them and us,” Noah said.

His family all agreed with him. In the days that followed, they loaded wagons with food, took it to the three passes, and unloaded it on tables, bins, and racks they had built at these locations. The second time they took food to the passes, they found all the food gone. On later trips, they began to notice people watching them from behind trees and boulders. On one trip, a child ran out from a hiding place. Calling from behind a tree its mother pleaded for the child to return. Shem, Ham, and Japheth stopped unloading the wagon. Shem waved, smiled at the child, and said ‘hello’ to the little boy. The little boy just stood and looked at the three strange men unloading the wagons. After a few minutes, the child scampered back to its mother. Then they returned to their work.

Incidents like this happened more frequently and finally the people grew less nervous and worried and they came out from the hiding places. They would look hungrily at the food, the three men unloaded from the wagon. In time, the three sons talked with the people and got to know them. These people began to recognize that Noah’s family was very different from themselves and all others they knew about in the other two clans. They did not hate or look down nor had malice toward those who were different from themselves.

Chapter 33

Noah's Family Expands

At the northwest pass, Shem noticed a young woman near the back of the group of people waiting for the food he and his brothers had brought to the pass. She smiled at him and he smiled back at her. On the next trip there, she ventured near the front of the group. After unloading the wagon, Shem took a nice size piece of meat that was cured and took it to the girl. He handed it to her and began to talk with her. Finally, his brothers yelled at him that it was time to go. Shem told the girl he had to leave and asked if she would be here the next time they came with food. She told him she would always be here to see him.

A romance flourished. After a time, Shem asked the girl if she wanted to go with him to the valley. This was his declaration that he wanted her to be his wife. This pleased her very much and she reached up and put her arms around him and kissed him right in front of everyone. This embarrassed Shem but it did not bother the others. They already knew the girl was in love with him. The girl's father was there and Shem asked if she could go with him. In the ancient custom, the group gathered around the two. The father took the girl's hand and placed it in Shem's hand. He held both hands together with his hands. Then he looked around and asked the question, "Two?" Then he looked at his daughter and then Shem and shook his head as he said, "No, now they are to be One!" Then everyone cheered as Shem embraced the girl who was to be his wife from that day forward.

Shem had told his father about the budding romance weeks before. It was no surprise to Noah when he saw the girl riding in the

wagon with his son. She was welcomed by the family especially Noah's wife.

[No records were ever found of the name of Noah's wife or the son's wives and for this story; I have chosen to call Noah's wife Sehaj (the first initial of each of her son's names).]

Sehaj was overjoyed finally having another woman in the family. After Shem's wife rearrange his house to suit her, she busied herself by joining in helping with the various chores the family had to do to maintain their homes and all that needed to be done working the fields and tending the livestock.

Ham repeated this experience a few months later. He had become attracted to a girl who came to the south pass when they delivered food there. In time, he brought his wife back to the valley. Finally, Japheth followed his two older brother's leads but he found his heart's desire at the pass to the east. On the seventh day of each week, the entire family would have dinner at Noah's house. Noah enjoyed seeing his daughter-in-law's different features as it added variety that he thought was beautiful and pleasing to Yeshua.

Noah knew how the three groups of people outside of the valley warred with each other. He was careful of how he talked about the 'outsiders' for fear of offending any of his son's wives. Gradually, he discovered these girls were of a temperament and disposition more like himself and his sons than the people they had come from. He thanked Elohim for provide these wives for his sons as he knew from watching other men and their wives how bad things can be when a man and woman who were husband and wife not only did not agree on most things but were virtually at war with each other.

Then some from the other groups venture down further into the valley seeking work. Noah and his sons had discussed the need to

The Beginning of the Beginning

get help as their farms and fields were so great, they were beginning to wear out from the hard-long hours of work each week. In order to keep things peaceful, Noah drew boundaries wherein individuals from each group would never come into contact with those of other groups. They built barracks to house the field hands during the week.

A rare exception was the few from each group Noah discovered that were of a gentler nature and as they got along with others who were different, they were hired to help around the homes of Noah and his sons. Their homes were all built with extra rooms and these were used by the household help to sleep in during the week.

Noah and his sons tried to teach these people the truths of Elohim, but they all just smiled and ignored what they said. They loved being paid and getting food for their families outside the valley but they wanted nothing to do with the beliefs of Noah. Each week at midday on the sixth day, all were very well paid and sent back to their family's home outside of the valley including those who worked in the homes. There was to be no work done on the seventh day Sabbath by anyone in the valley.

In the years since the marriages of the three sons with young women of the three separate groups, this seemed to please each of the three groups and everything was peaceful. Within the genes of these three women were the outward physical characteristics that would form all the various ethnic and racial diversity that would eventually repopulate the entire world after a fateful event took place.

In the surrounding lands, the perversions and warfare continued to grow to ever greater and horrifying levels. New weapons and tactics were developed. Each of the three groups constantly schemed and tried to find a way to completely annihilate everyone who was

not of their group. The evil perversion grew to the level of human sacrifice and cannibalism. Each year the strife drew nearer to the valley where Noah and his family lived.

Eventually, the time came in which Noah and his family was completely cut off from the families of their lineage. Not only could they not travel to visit, they could not even send or receive any messages from each other. Each week on the seventh day, the entire family gathered for the meal at Noah's home. He could see the worry and concern about the world outside their valley grow greater in their faces and mannerisms and the nervous talk while eating. One night at this meal, Noah wondered aloud if his grandfather, Methuselah or his father, Lamech were still alive. Then his son, Shem reminded him of Methuselah's oft repeated warning, "When I die, all the Earth will also die." While this assured him that his grandfather was alive, Noah still wondered if his father, Lamech, also lived.

Chapter 34

Elohim Plans to Destroy the Inhabitants on Earth

Gabriel returned to present his report to Yah and Yeshua. As he drew near the thrones, the four-winged guardians continuously watched him with cautious eyes ready to leap in defense of their masters.

He bowed low on one knee before their thrones and then addressed them, "Great Elohim, the condition of the world is as you feared. Listening to the thoughts, hearing their words, and watching their actions reveal beings wholly depraved with hands full of blood."

"Is there no group of beings that have some redeeming qualities?" Yeshua asked.

"Only one family. A man named Noah, his wife, and their three sons; Shem, Ham, and Japheth. He is the last of the first-born sons since your servant, Seth, except for his father, Lamech, and his grandfather, Methuselah, who are very elderly," Gabriel answered.

"Ah, yes, Methuselah, son of Enoch," Yeshua responded, *"Such a fine young man whom I promised that he would live until judgment came to the world's inhabitants if evil prevailed unstopped and uncontrolled."*

"You too saw the people completely falling away from our ways before we took Enoch?" Yah commented rather than asked as He shook His head sadly.

“Yes, I saw a trend that I feared our servants would be unable to change,” Yeshua stated and then turned to Gabriel. *“What about the wives of the sons of Noah?”*

“The wives of the three sons are not fully compliant with your ways, Yeshua, but their hearts are far from the evil of those about,” Gabriel responded.

“It has saddened me greatly as nearly two thousand Earth years has passed from Adam to this time and his seed has ever increasingly grown more wicked in following the ways of Satan. I am sad to say but I truly regret ever having made man,” Yah said with a great sigh as His eyes slowly filled with tears.

“From Adam to Noah, only eleven righteous men out of millions of inhabitants who walked the Earth have kept the faith. Perhaps it is time to stop this chapter and begin anew. Yet, I believe in time those who call upon our name will prevail over evil,” Yeshua stated hopefully.

“Then let us prepare for a new beginning. We will wait till Lamech dies and in the year Methuselah dies we will destroy all those who follow the path of the evil one. Make plans to protect Noah and his family in a deep cave while we rain down fire and brimstone and destroy the Earth,” Yah said solemnly.

“I have an idea. Most of the Earth is covered with water and there are great caverns of water below the surface of the land. If we bring up this water and pour it out upon the Earth as it rains for, say, forty days and nights, it will flood the entire planet drowning and thereby killing its inhabitants,” Yeshua explained.

“Then how will you protect Noah?” Yah asked.

The Beginning of the Beginning

"We will have him build a boat," Yeshua answered.

"But, how will he survive after the flood? What about all the animals, plants, insects, and flying birds? Shall we recreate all this again as we did before we created man and the Garden?" Yah wondered, and paused but a time no longer than a blink of an eye. (As man could have seen, yet for Elohim such a short virtually instantaneous time could have lasted for hundreds of years.) Yah grasped what Yeshua was proposing and said, ***"Have Noah build a very large boat."***

"A very, very, large boat, in fact, an ark," Yeshua said as his mind whirled calculating all the species of living creatures on the Earth and their survival. Finally, He replied, *"By taking a male and female of the basic species it will take..."* Yeshua then provided details of the ark and the space that would be used so that all living creatures would be able to survive the flood.

"Good," Yah's voice seemed more relaxed, ***"It is a good plan. I want to discuss how we are going to interact with mankind after the flood. As soon as you contact Noah we will talk about it."***

"Very well," Yeshua replied.

Yah went over the plans with the twenty-four elders and then had Michael and Gabriel prepare angelic bands which when ordered to proceed would then go to Earth to trouble the clouds and breakup the fountains of the deep **16**.

\mathcal{R} of \mathcal{D}

Chapter 35

Elohim Tells Noah to Build an Ark

"Noah," Yeshua said in a calm soft voice.

Noah turned about and was about to respond but saw no one nearby. He scratched his head and was about to continue hoeing the last row of this garden as this was the sixth day of the week. Then he heard his name called again.

"Noah!" this time much louder coming from above him.

"Yes, Master," he said as he closed his eyes and fell to his knees realizing that it was the voice of Yeshua Elohim calling to him.

"The end of all living creatures on Earth is about to come to pass because of the total evil and unrelenting violence of all mankind," Yeshua's voice slowly grew louder.

"Your will be done, my Elohim," Noah whispered a prayer, "whether I live or die, blessed be your name."

"Noah, the lives of you and your family will be spared as you have faithfully served me and followed My way of righteousness. I want you to build a great boat, an ark that will carry your family and pairs of living creatures to repopulate the world after I destroy it by floodwaters. Use gopher wood covered inside and out with pitch. Using the measure from the tip of your middle finger to the tip of your elbow, a cubit, the dimensions of the ark are 300 cubits long with a beam of 50 cubits. It will have three decks and stand 30 cubits tall. It will have two openings: a window at the very top and a door

in the side. When the ark is complete, I will cause a male and female of every kind of living creature to come into the ark. Of animals, that you can safely eat the flesh of, I will bring seven pairs of each kind. Besides building the ark, you must begin planting and storing grain for food for you and the animals to eat while waiting for the floodwaters to recede and as well as provide seed for garden plants to begin to grow again. During the time, these animals' dwell on the ark, I will change the nature of the flesh eaters to eat hay and grain like sheep. Do not fear Noah, for I, your Elohim, will ever be with you **17**.”

Noah opened his eyes after he felt the presence of Yeshua depart and got up on his feet. Near the garden with plants he had been removing weeds lay a large flat area used for pastures that he was considering having plowed for additional planting. He walked over to one end of it, took his hoe, and began scraping a mark in the Earth that outlined the dimensions Elohim had given him for the ark. When he finished this, he climbed up on a hill nearby, sat down, and looked upon what he had drawn. It was enormous. A little while later as he still sat there on the hill mentally thinking of how to accomplish the task his three sons came in from working in a field on the other side of a thick forest. They too wanted to get home and bath and be refreshed. They always looked forward to the seventh day rest they would enjoy tomorrow.

"Father," Shem called to him, "what are you doing?"

Noah did not answer him but just sat there deeply lost in thought. Soon all three had climbed the hill and were standing beside their father looking at the lines scratched in the field. They too sat down and considered the markings in the field and wondered what it meant.

The Beginning of the Beginning

"Are you laying out a new field to cultivate?" Japheth asked.

"That sure is a strange shape for a garden," Ham stated scratching his head.

"No, my sons," Noah finally answered and motioned for them to gather around closer to him. They crawled over to him and sat there patiently waiting for their father to speak. He slowly turned and looked at each of them with a smile and a nod. Each returned a smile and a nod with deep respect as they noted his manner had become very serious and then in a very solemn voice, he began to speak to them, "Just a little while ago, Yeshua spoke to me."

"The Great Elohim, Yeshua?" Shem asked in astonishment.

"Yes, and what He told me was very disturbing," Noah paused. His sons kept quite as they saw that their father was contemplating something very serious. Then Noah announced, "Soon, all of mankind is going to die."

The sons sat quietly considering what their father had just said. Shem was the first to speak saying what the other also thought.

"The way they war and kill one another, it's just a matter of time before the outsiders invade our valley and kill us. They will eventually kill everyone including themselves. I am not worried about dying myself, but I do not want our mother and wives to suffer from those evil people," Shem replied.

"Yeshua is not going to wait for them to kill each other off," Noah told them firmly, "He is going to bring a great flood of water and drown them all."

“Other than the rivers and streams, how will Yeshua bring about so much water to drown everyone? They will just get in their boats and go somewhere else to escape flood in this valley and surrounding plains,” Japheth questioned.

“They will not escape this flood as the entire Earth will be covered deeply with water even above the highest mountain while violent raging storms such as was before our father Adam was created and the Garden in Eden was formed. Such will crush or capsize and sink any boat man has ever built until now,” Noah answered.

“What's to become of us? We have obeyed Yeshua's way. Must we die also?” Ham asked with fear in his voice.

“Don't worry, my son,” Noah then spoke reassuring them all, “The Master Elohim, Yeshua, has noted our faithfulness and will reward us according to His tender mercy. He has commanded and instructed that you and I build a great boat such as has not been thought of by mortal man. It will be an ark to carry our families and pairs of living creatures that live above the waters. We will tend to them in safety until the waters recede. Then we will begin life on Earth anew. The ark is what I have been drawing in the dirt there,” Noah said as he pointed to the lines that nearly covered the field.

“Wow!” Japheth exclaimed as his eyes followed the lines stretching out far across the field, “it'll take us hundreds of years to build a boat that size.”

“Then we will have to get busy,” Noah said, “I would rather wait to tell the women folk about it tomorrow or they will keep us all up all night asking questions and speculating about all kind of

The Beginning of the Beginning

things. Then the first day of the week, we will begin planning the details and start gathering the materials we will need."

They all walked toward the main house where Noah and his wife, Sehaj, lived and then separated to their own homes. The men all tried to keep this from their wives, but after years of marriage, the women knew something was going on that was being kept from them. Each man told their wife that they would tell them something very extraordinary on the morrow if they would stop asking questions, give them their supper, and just let them get a good night's sleep.

Just as the sun rose above the eastern horizon, Noah rang the bell on his front porch that was used to call everyone to come to his house. All the sons and their wives came rushing wearing only their bedclothes. He told them to dress and then come back to have breakfast at his home. He would not answer any questions until they came back. They all hurried back to their homes to dress. The wives peppered their husbands with questions trying to get them to tell them what was going on. They were told that they did not know enough to tell them anything and that they would both find out when they got back to Noah's home. When they arrived, they were told to come on in. Noah was helping Sehaj with the cooking. The daughters-in-law in spite of dying to ask questions went about setting the table and further helping to finish preparing the breakfast meal. The men brought in the extra chairs to set at the table and looked around for something to do as the women finished cooking. Finally, the food was set on the table and they all sat down. Before eating as their custom was, the oldest said a prayer.

"Great Elohim in heaven," Noah began in prayer, "we pause to again thank You for everything good and wonderful that You bless us with each day of our lives. We pause to especially thank you for

making provisions to sustain our lives when the coming judgment takes place on the inhabitants of Earth.”

The women sat wide-eyed right after Noah finished praying and said, “Amen.” In fear, they looked first at Noah and then to their husbands. Noah told them to cease their fears and not to worry for great things were about to happen. Then he told them of Elohim speaking to him and telling him what was going to happen. Only after He gave them Elohim’s assurance that they would be spared and brought through it all alive and well did they all begin to fill their plates and start eating. Noah began telling them of the ark they were to build and how pairs of animals of every species would come to the ark for refuge. To build such an ark and fill it with provisions would take many years. But, from that day forward, that was to be their number one mission in life.

While the men dug into their food, the wives of the sons just sat there in a daze. Finally, they began to ask questions. As they listened to the answers, they just picked at their food. While the young wives did not approve of the way their own families outside the valley lived, they still cared about them. Noah explained that the evil ways of those who do not follow the way of Yeshua is what was going to destroy them. He told them that Elohim would not destroy any who were faithful to Him. After finishing the meal, the sons and their wives left and went to their own homes where they spent the rest of the day trying to come to grips with what they had learned.

“What about your father and grandfather and their other children? As far as I know, they were also faithful in following the way of Yeshua. Will Yeshua destroy them as well as the heathen?” Sehaj asked Noah after the others had left for their own homes.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“It has been years since we have been able to send or receive any messages between us. Elohim has told me that no one who is faithful to him will perish from the flood. It must be that He will provide them safety or that they and all who are faithful other than us will have died a natural death before the rains begin,” Noah answered her.

In the first few weeks that followed, the wives of the sons sent word to their families that they needed to talk to them. In turn, each experienced much the same reaction. Each son drove a carriage, went with his wife to meet her father at the pass they had met before becoming husband and wife. The wife left the wagon and went a short distance to speak with her father privately. When she told her father about the impending destruction of Earth and pleaded with him to change his ways her message was thoroughly rejected. Sadly, each wife of Noah’s sons was laughed at and ridiculed to scorn. Then their own father threatened them. They demanded that they leave the valley so they could be given to men outside for wives. Noah’s sons stood alert and ready to defend their wives in case of trouble. In turn, they watched as each of their wives turned and ran sobbing back to the wagon as their fathers stomped off in a rage. The wives talked with each other and then each told their husband that they had no other family nor other Elohim than those of Noah.

Chapter 36

Building the Ark

Noah and his sons were greatly blessed by Elohim and they had become incredibly prosperous farmers and owned large herds of sheep, goats, and cattle. Over time, they had begun to trade with people from the surrounding plains beyond the mountains and were well known and respected by all. His family traded the grain that filled his overflowing storage bins and traded livestock from crowded pastures and pens to neighboring groups for timber and other building materials. Noah developed a plan to keep the three groups surrounding his land from getting too close to each other and precipitating a fight. He set one group to transport trees of gopher wood from beyond the valley and to build a large sawmill and to begin cutting the trees into lumber planks and beams at a location near the site he was building the ark. A second group was busily engaged making bricks near the river. These were transported to a spot far enough from the sawmill that the groups never saw each other. The bricks were used to build kilns to dry and cure the lumber after cutting. The third group worked in the fields planting and harvesting many grains. Once the kilns were complete the second group returned to tending the vast flocks of sheep, goats, and cattle scattered across thousands of acres of pastures that ran along the foothills of the mountain ranges. The first group transported the wood to the kilns and later took it to the building site.

Noah and his sons were the only ones who worked on the ark. They staked out the building site. Ham asked which end was the front. Noah told him that both ends would be the same, as the ark would not be steered as boats used on rivers were. It was slow and hard work as they built scaffolding on the sides while the rest of the

boards cured. Some of the boards were cured in a bowed shaped while most of the others were cured straight. Several years quickly passed as they built the framework for the bottom and started on the first level of the ark.

By the end of ten years, the lower sides of the ark's hull finally began to take shape. Curious on-lookers and suppliers at first thought they were going to build another barn. As the material kept flowing in, they thought, very large barns. But, no one could figure out why the sides were curved. Finally, as the structural shape took a curved appearance with a flat bottom, they realized that it looked like a tremendously large barge. Some were accustomed to seeing barges on some waterways. Only this was nearly one hundred times greater than anything anyone had ever seen. Words like 'gigantic', 'incredibly humongous', and 'colossal' accompanied their descriptions to others.

Finally, some began to ask them why they were building such a huge boat so far from any waterway that could hold it. Noah answered them truthfully but everyone outside his family just laughed and shook their heads saying that was the craziest if not the stupidest thing they had ever heard. No one believed him or took him seriously. They told others when they returned to their homes and everyone laughed so hard, they could hardly stand. Everyone thought Noah and his family had gone completely crazy. However, as long as the pay in grain and livestock kept coming, it was an exceptionally good deal for these people to work for them. So, they kept supplying the timber and labor in the fields and were content.

Years started turning into decades as only the sons and Noah labored tirelessly along with their wives as if their lives depended on it actually building the ark itself. Initially Noah's sons could not spend the entire day building the ark, as they had to tend fields of

The Beginning of the Beginning

crops and take care of livestock. Noah soon decided the urgency of building the ark was too important for them to spend so much time on other things. Therefore, he contracted out fields and flocks to others and paid them a share of the increase each year. The terms were so generous the caretakers were diligent, the harvest from crops was plentiful, and the increase in livestock herds was phenomenal.

After 50 years, a gigantic superstructure had risen from the ground. Wide ramps were made so they could go from one level (deck) to another. Using levers and pulleys, they hoisted large beams into place and worked from scaffolding 100 feet high at times. Several times miraculous events occurred. For example, Shem was struggling to work a very large beam into place while Ham and Japheth pried against it with a long pole. Suddenly, the beam slipped off the support and began to fall. In horror, they saw it falling directly toward their father, Noah who was standing below them directing the task. They screamed and Noah tried to jump to the side. Just inches from striking Noah, the beam stopped in mid-air, and then swung back up. It settled onto the support and then slid into place seemingly on its own. Then they all saw a faint glimpse of what looked like a man with wings releasing the beam and then disappearing. Shem drove in the pegs on his end while the others attached the other end in its place. Noah climbed the stairs and drew the other three close by him. After he had offered a prayer of thanks to Elohim, he apologized for not planning the task better and cautioned that they must be more careful and take more safety precautions on dangerous tasks.

It was nothing short of miraculous how ideas came into the minds of Noah and his three sons on how to construct the ark. They had worked together building their homes and storage bins and barns for grain and housing livestock, but this was something very new. Noah had assured them that Elohim would inspire their minds and

guide their hands to complete this project. As the ark took shape, their confidence soared. The ark was so big that just to complete the sides up to the first deck took nearly twenty years. Each board was notched and grooved so it would interlock with the others, fitting perfectly in its place and wooden pegs were driven into the beams to make a solid joint. Adding to the difficulty was the ark was built nearly twenty feet above the ground so the bottom as well as the sides could be covered with pitch to further ensure its seaworthiness and resistance to leaking. The supporting framework had to hold up the entire ark along with all its contents. Each week, the sons measured the distance from lines on massive poles sunk deep into the earth to the surface of the ground. They reported there had been no change from previous weeks. Even as they completed each deck, no change was noted. It was amazing to them that Elohim had inspired them in every phase of this project to do things never before done by them or anyone else they knew of since their forefathers had lived.

As they reached the one hundredth year, they took note that the sides had been completed and pitched within and without and the third deck floor and rooms were almost complete. Noah was inspired by Elohim to know that initially as the waters first lifted the ark from its berth it would shake and roll. Therefore, they built stalls and cages to contain each pair of animals and framed in rooms to store food on each level. There were also large open areas where the animals could roam and even run about. As they labored each day, the list of tasks to be completed seemed to get longer rather than shorter. How many hundred years was it going to take to finish everything in such a massive structure Ham and Japheth often wondered aloud?

On the one hundredth year anniversary of beginning the ark, all eight were inside eating their noon meal on the top or third deck shaded from the sun by the partially completed roof above. It was

The Beginning of the Beginning

the seventh day of the weekly cycle and all who worked for Noah did not come into the valley. Faintly at first then more loudly they heard a rumbling sound outside the ark. They all stopped eating and climbed up scaffoldings that allowed them to look over the side of the top deck. Coming in from three separate directions, they saw huge formations of large armies of men. These were in three distinct separate groups and all were equipped for battle. At first Noah and the others in the ark thought they were about to witness a great battle to be fought between the three groups and they were given front row seats. Then they began to tremble as they realized that none were facing other groups but all were moving toward the ark. Noah's family heard the sound of horns blowing and horses, chariots, and great animals some with long trunks and others with great horns were in array pulling gigantic catapults. It was clear they all intended to attack and destroy the ark and all its inhabitants.

"What shall we do?" Ham called to Noah as he and the others ran from side to side looking out and then shaking with fear. The three sons' wives chased after their husbands and tried to cling to them as they cried and screamed in terror. On the planes below them, they soon lost count as thousands of huge monstrous catapults began to ready themselves to launch. Their baskets were loaded with large balls covered with pitch that they set on fire awaiting a signal to launch.

"Do not fear," Noah told the family and motioned for them to all come together and kneel and hold each other's hands. Noah bowed his head and began to pray, "Great Elohim in heaven, we bow before your omnipotent presence at this time of impending calamity. Lo, these one hundred years we have faithfully labored in serving you and building this ark. We do not know what to do right now, as we are so few against so many. Yet, we completely trust in you to

protect us from this peril. We thank you for hearing our prayers and giving us the victory."

They all heard a voice boom out from above them, "*Fear not, for I am with you. Go to the sides of the ark that you might behold the redemption of your Lord.*"

Just as the eight reached the sides and looked over, the armies launched their catapults, flaming balls of fire sailed upward, and their trajectories arched toward the ark. The women screamed and the sons shook in fear, but Noah stood firm and began singing praises to Elohim. One hundred yards from the ark, the balls of fire exploded, as they seemed to hit an invisible wall. The balls burst into flaming fragments that began to fall down on the men on the ground at the forefront of the armies surrounding the ark. The men near the front line began to panic and draw back but their leaders screamed curses at them while horns sounded for them to charge.

Above the turmoil, Noah and his family heard the sound of rushing wind as dark clouds formed and lightning flashed all around them. Below the armies looked upward and saw what looked like a huge army clad in shining armor on horses with swords drawn. Then the armies of heaven charged down upon the three groups about the ark. To the ones on the ark it looked like lightning bolts had begun to strike the armies below and three funnel shaped clouds that looked like they were on fire descended upon the three separate groups. Below, the armies began to flee screaming in terror as legends of angelic beings swept down upon them striking them with their swords and trampling them with the horse's hooves. In a matter of minutes only broken spears, swords, and other discarded armaments were left within view of those in the ark. There were no bodies or animals left, but only trampled fields in all directions.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Again, the family formed a circle and knelt while holding each other's hands. All bowed their heads without being told. They were all filled with awe at what they had witnessed. Noah again prayed, "We thank you again, oh mighty Elohim for your deliverance and your love for your servants. We pray that you will continue to strengthen our bodies and our faith to complete this task."

From that time, the suppliers would not bring their materials as close to the ark as they had done before the spoiled attack. Even though the suppliers had not participated in the attack, they had heard from a few men who had been on the fringes. These had fled immediately upon seeing the catapulted missiles explode in the air about the ark. This had saved their lives but they had since become so overcome by shock and terror that they had become babbling imbeciles. The suppliers were also terrified by what they could make out of the witnesses' mumblings. They still wanted the rewards that would come from continuing to supply Noah, but would shake and nervously looked upward above the ark and not come near the ark. Noah and his sons built shelters about the ark with the payments for the suppliers and for those who would continue to work the fields and care for the livestock. Noah's sons regularly met with the suppliers to assure them that no harm would befall them as long as they did not attempt to harm their family or the ark. Still, the suppliers would quickly unload the supplies and then drove their wagons as fast as the oxen and horses could pull them away from that dreadful place. Noah's sons also met with the others who tended the farms giving them instructions as needed and arranging for them to get their payments.

It did not take another hundred years to complete the ark. As the one hundred and nineteenth year passed, they completed the arched roof above the third deck. The rooms inside each level were all nearly complete and the window in the roof was installed. It

would be the only opening they could use when the ark was closed and the waters lifted it off the ground.

"Wow," Shem exclaimed one day as he looked out the open window. "One can see for miles and miles in all directions." On the horizon through the gaps in the mountains, he could now see the taller buildings of cities that surrounded the valley. On some rooftops, he could just barely make out the shapes of people no doubt looking at this strange boat occasionally pointing in this direction not daring to get closer. Smoke ascended from chimneys in some houses that reminded him it was nearly dinnertime.

Talk was lively as the eight sat about the table at Noah's house as they were eating their meal on the seventh day.

"What else is there to do to finish the ark?" Ham asked his father Noah.

"There are hundreds of little things. One big task is to apply the pitch mixture I have made about the door so when it is closed it will keep water out. I want to be sure it has time to dry before the door is closed or we might have to hack a hole in the side of the ark in order to get out," he replied.

"Oh yes, I meant to ask you about the door," Japheth inquired, "after we attached the hinges and removed the supports where we built it in place it took all three of us using long beams for levers to close it and see how it fit."

"And it fit like a glove on a hand," Shem interjected.

"That's not the problem," Japheth went on, "how are we going to climb up and get in the window once we close the door for good?"

The Beginning of the Beginning

Shall we make a rope ladder and hang it from the window to the ground. We can all close the door and then climb to the window."

"That's a good question and an idea that might work," Noah answered with a smile. "I will ask the Lord Elohim what to do. Somehow, I think He will cause a strong wind or simply reach down His hand and close it for us. Let us stand fast and see His will performed. "

"Yeah, that works for me," Ham joined in, "I am tired of all the heavy lifting and pushing and pulling. Just give me a hammock and some juice and I'll just swing away as the waters rock the boat."

The other brothers laughed but felt that their father was right. It had not been that long since the Great Yeshua had destroyed the three armies that had sought to kill them and destroy the ark. He had not and would not ever fail them as they did His will and followed His commandments.

Chapter 37

Preparing for the Voyage of the Ark

"Starting tomorrow we will begin to load the grain and food stocks on all the decks," Noah instructed, "We also need to secure all the furnishings to the walls and floor and begin putting everything we carry with us in bins so they will not scatter nor fall about as the waters move the ark about."

The talk all but stopped as each soberly imagined what it would be like shut off from the world inside the vast ark. The wives had spent thousands of days making lamps with wicks that would burn oil. These had been placed in nearly every room and hallway throughout the ark. Noah had designed a system using mirrors to transmit light from the window in the roof to every passageway on all three levels. Yet, this would only work to provide light when the sun was out and not blocked by storm clouds. They rarely spent much time walking about after sunset as they slept peacefully during each night. Still, they were not sure of what they might need to do during the nights they would have the ark full of various animals.

From every deck, vent shafts rose up to the peak of the roof to allow air to circulate throughout the entire ark. Fresh air came in and passed through flexible baffles that only let it move in one direction so the stale air was forced out carefully constructed louvers that could be opened and closed not allowing water from the rain or waves to enter. Waste and refuse would be shoveled up and tossed into chutes so it would fall down shafts into a large open area below the bottom deck. There was a slope on the decks so each chamber that held animals drained into the refuse chutes as well. There were spigots for water and buckets placed at intervals for cleaning the

floors of each stall. The holding area for refuse had its own air venting shafts that reached the peak of the ark's roof. In addition, there were bins of powdered lye, which could be dispensed into the refuse chutes to combat foul odors. This would keep the smell and fumes from bothering the animals at all levels as well as the people who would live on the top deck.

Besides the three sets of ramps that lead from deck to deck, Noah had devised two shafts where platforms with railings around them were suspended with large ropes, pulleys, and counterbalances that allowed the elevators to carry things from deck to deck. The multiple pulley systems worked so well that even the smallest wife would be able to move things weighing thousands of pounds up and down the levels of the ark.

After several trial runs with various loads, the men folk decided to give the women a ride. Noah stood by the open gate while the sons herded their wives aboard. The last onto the platform was Noah's wife as she fussed with Noah that she had better things to do. All eight stood holding the railing with both hands, which caused them to face outward. Noah closed the gate on the platform and took hold on the ropes with one hand while he prepared to pull on a lever with the other hand. The women were able to look down and saw they were what looked like hundreds of feet in the air. As a couple of the wives shifted their weight, the platform moved and seemed to sway back and forth.

"I don't want to do this," Ham's wife pleaded, "please let me off." The other wives chimed in and the noise quickly grew louder and the swaying seemed to increase.

"**Silence!**" shouted Noah to which they all quieted down, "There is nothing to be afraid of."

The Beginning of the Beginning

"We have put ten times the combined weight of us all and it worked just fine. We are all perfectly safe," Shem added. Still, his wife and the other wives acted as if they were terrified and clung tightly to their husbands with one hand and the railing with the other.

Noah pulled the lever and the platform seemed to sway even more and several wives let out a worried 'Oh'. He then began pulling up on a rope and the platform slowly descended from the third deck. Shem sounded off the deck levels as they went from the third deck past the second deck and finally reached the first or bottom deck. After reaching the bottom deck, Noah began pulling another rope and the elevator rose back up to the second deck and stopped at the gate that opened onto the flooring of the second deck. He pulled a lever and the platform locked into place and then he slid back the gate and the women rushed off shaking their heads as their husbands began to laugh. The women almost ran down the hallways to the door in the side of the ark, they went down the large ramp at its entrance to the ground below toward their homes.

"Actually, it was kind of fun," Shem's wife confided to her mother-in-law with a low voice.

"It will sure make it easier to carry things to the animals on the lower decks," Noah's wife, Sehaj admitted also whispering, "just don't let the men know that we like it or they will try to get us to tend to all the animals all the time." As soon as they were far enough away from the ark where the men could not hear them, they both started laughing. The other two wives just looked at them as if they were crazy. They hurried to their homes, and shut the door fearing what else the men would have them do.

Loading the food for all the animals and themselves was an enormous task in its own right. They loaded wagons and had oxen pull them into the ark and up or down ramps to the food storage bins and rooms on each deck. The large animals would be housed on the lowest deck while the lightest and smallest would find their abode on the third deck where Noah and his family also would have their residences. The roof was high above the third deck and the birds would be able to fly about when not in their cages.

Providing water for each animal would be one of the easier tasks. Several large holding tanks had been built near the roofline and above the second level to hold water. There were small openings in the roof to allow rainwater to replenish the tanks. These could be closed while violent storms raged and be opened when the weather was calmer. Initially, it had taken thousands of loads to fill them just one quarter full. Noah was inspired to fill them only that full, as the remainder would come from the rain while they floated above the mountains. An ingenious method was devised to dispense the water to all the living creatures. Using ropes, one could open a slouch and water would flow from a holding tank down to water troughs on each of the decks below.

As they completed the last of the major tasks, Noah had paid all the people from outside the valley and told them to take a vacation with a bonus that was the size of a more than a year of wages. These people went away overjoyed with wagons full of food, tools, and herds they were given to drive out to graze where they lived outside the valley. They had no idea that they would not be returning for their work was finished.

Chapter 38

Creatures Great and Small Enter the Ark

Shortly after finishing breakfast Noah left his home, entered the ark, and then sat down in a study room, he had built in the ark and looked at the last task list he had made and saw it had been completed. In his mind's eye, he looked over every level trying to think of what else needed to be done. His mind swept over the immense project and the time they had spent working on it. As he added up the years, the total was within two weeks of one hundred and twenty years. He had been at it for several hours when suddenly, he heard one of his sons yelling something and then he heard the others yelling and shouting. He left his room and ran to the ladder and climbed it to the window in the roof. He opened it and peered out and his jaw dropped as he gazed at the spectacle below. As far as his eyes could see in all directions, lines of animals were making their way to the ark. He could hear exactly what his family had been yelling, "They're coming, they're coming!"

Noah climbed back down and ran down the ramp to the second level and put his arm around his wife who was standing with their sons and their wives as they stood by the door. Soon, up the ramp came pairs of animals both large and small. As the animals entered the ark, they seemed to know exactly where to go without being herded by the people. The larger ones went down a ramp to the first deck while the smallest went up another ramp to the third deck. Those of medium size found their places on the second deck. Multicolored birds flew down from the sky into the ark's open door. Then Noah told his three sons to each go to a separate deck level to make sure there were no problems. All watched in amazement as each pair went directly to a stall or cage that was just the right size

for each pair. Soon, all eight were busy placing food into bins and filling troughs of water for the animals to eat and drink.

During that week, animals came to the ark at a steady pace all day and all night. Each morning it became an exciting adventure to see what new animals were in various size stalls and cages throughout the ark. As each day ended and the week neared its end, the pace began to slacken until several hours would pass between the arrivals of new pairs of animals entering the ark. Noah rechecked his figures and looked back over the records of all they had done and the dates of their completion. He was sure now that he had not made any mistake in his calculations. In just one more week and one day, it would be exactly one hundred and twenty years since YESHUA had spoken to him and they had begun to build the ark. The sons and wives had already brought everything they wanted to keep aboard the ark. They now slept on the ark and had already determined what other modification were desired to make their stay more comfortable if not simply more tolerable. Noah called up to Japheth who was standing at the open window looking out.

"Can you see any more animals?" Noah called to him.

"Just a few coming a couple of miles out. I can see some more closer. Yes, there is one set of animals I have never seen or heard about within the shadow of the ark," he responded, "I don't see any further off in the distance."

"Well," Noah said after a minute spent in deep thought, "keep a lookout a bit longer. I'll have Ham relieve you shortly. We will keep a watch out till dark today."

The Beginning of the Beginning

Noah went back in his study and a low voice spoke to him. He knew that voice, it was Yeshua. He dropped to his knees and bowed his head.

"Noah," the voice of Yeshua spoke, "In just seven days I will bring down rain to flood the Earth. It will rain for forty days and forty nights and will destroy all living creatures that breath air. Get your family into the ark and keep them within for I will be closing the door at sunrise."

After the sun slipped below the horizon, Noah began on the top deck and went along the passageways checking stalls and cages. He found three that were empty on the top deck. Next, he did the same on the second deck. One empty stall. Finally, on the bottom deck he found another empty stall. Why are there empty places for animals, Noah thought? Perhaps he had made a mistake in laying out the ark, but no, he answered himself. At every step, his mind clearly saw what needed to be done and how to do it. There must be some animals that have not made it to the ark. Where are they? He wondered as he looked out the large door in the side of the ark.

He had already sent Shem before he had started his tour of the ark with instructions to gather everyone to the third deck of the ark telling them that from now on, they would be staying aboard the ark and no one was to leave it. That night as they ate their meal in the dining area on the third deck, their talk was lively and positive. After the meal, Noah announced that in one week they would mark one hundred and twenty years exactly since they started building. Several began saying that they wanted to go back out and get some other things the next day. Noah shook his head no. He then warned them to stay on the ark and not wander off because the LORD might close the door at any time. The others became very quiet and

solemnly realized that what they had been warned of for over a hundred and twenty years was soon to take place.

Noah did not sleep well that night. After tossing and turning for an hour, he finally got up from the bed. He looked in on each of his sons and their wives to see that all were secure. Then he went down to the door and looked out again. He lit several lanterns near the doorway and on poles at the sides of the bottom of the ramp.

He placed a chair in the middle of the door way and sat down. He finally drifted off to sleep. Suddenly, he heard the sound of wings as two bats and two owls zoomed past just missing his head. Startled, he jumped up and looked into the ark as the two sets of winged creatures flew upward toward the third deck.

Then he heard growls and the pounding of feet coming up the ramp and turned just in time to see two large lions running at full speed heading right at him. He fell to the floor and the pair jumped over him continuing to their place on the second deck. He rolled over to a sitting position as he felt the ramp shaking violently from the pounding of very heavy hooves. The floor of the ark also shook so he could not get to his feet. Looking down the ramp, he saw two huge rhinoceros coming his way. He could only watch as the two parted after they ran up the ramp with one passing to his left and the other to his right.

Laughing, he got up and was just about to leave when he felt the floor begin to vibrate again. He stopped and turned, and then his jaw dropped as he watched the huge door began to close on its own. One more pair, he remembered, where are they? Is it too late? Just before the door finished closing two tiny birds darted into the ark and stopped in midair very close to Noah's face. They seemed to hover with wings that beat so fast they were nearly invisible and made a humming sound. They seemed to be saying to Noah, 'What were

The Beginning of the Beginning

you worried about? We made it with plenty of time to spare.' Off they zoomed in a blur up the ramp.

With the door completely closed. Noah climbed a platform and slid the top locking beam into place. Then he climbed back down and slid the middle and then the lower locking beams across the door into their places. Then he blew out one lantern and carried the other as he made his way up the ramp to the third level. He walked down a hallway, opened the door, and went into his bedroom. He blew out the lantern and started to lie down.

"What's wrong?" his wife asked as she rolled over having been awakened when she felt Noah getting into their bed.

"Nothing, nothing at all," Noah said with a smile on his face as he lay down and quickly slipped into a peaceful sleep.

Thus Noah did; according to all that Elohim commanded him, so he did. (Genesis 6: 22)

Chapter 39

The Voyage of the Ark

To Noah it seemed like he had just fallen into a deep sleep when someone began knocking on the door. Awakened, Noah yawned and stretched.

"What's the matter?" he finally called as he rose from the bed and walked toward the door.

"The door to the Ark is shut tight," Ham called to him, "the locking beams are jammed, and we can't budge them to open the door."

"Of course, you can't," Noah said as he opened the bedroom door, "Elohim closed the door just before sunrise. No one will be able to go out or come in."

"What should we do?" asked Japheth also standing by the door.

"What we have planned to do for a hundred and twenty years, take care of the animals until it is time to leave the ark," Noah answered.

Each day during that last week, they attended to chores and took turns looking out the window in the roof. They noticed that above them that clouds were forming and growing larger and darker as each day passed. They also noticed that some spectators were beginning to get closer and some began pointing at the closed door on the ark. On the third day, it became clear to those outside the ark that Noah and his family were in the ark and had left a considerable amount of

belongings outside. Various gangs began ransacking their homes and barns. By the sixth day, the three groups were openly fighting over the remaining livestock that had been turned loose by Noah's sons before they entered the ark for the last time and the door was closed. They watched sadly as far as they could see in every direction, thousands of people were engaged in a fight to the death. Their once peaceful valley had been turned into a battlefield. Blood flowed so rampantly they could even see little streams of it flowing from the fighting.

On the seventh morning since they entered the ark, tremendous lightning bolts struck all around the ark which sent out ear shattering peals of thunder as the clouds burst open and rain poured down in torrents on the Earth. From the window each day, they saw the water grow deeper around them. Finally, they saw people on mountaintops while others were climbing higher into trees. Some tried to swim to the ark and cried out for help until the swirling waters sweep them away or pulled them under. In the distance, they saw some boats trying to stay afloat. Waves tossed about and one by one every boat they had seen was capsized or crushed against a rocky peak and sank below the raging water. The ark began to slowly rock side to side so they closed and locked the window and went to their rooms. Each couple knelt by their bedsides and in prayer thanked the Eternal Elohim for sparing their lives.

With an enormous groan, the ark lifted off its berth and began to drift about as the wind blew and the waves continually crash against it. Initially, Noah and his family felt the vibration and sound of the ark brushing against trees and bumping into the tops of hills and mountains. As days passed, it was floating free and no longer bumped into anything. It swayed, rose, and fell over towering waves. Sometimes they had to strap themselves onto beds or chairs to keep from falling onto the floor. They realized they had

The Beginning of the Beginning

overlooked this particular detail in building the ark; however, with a couple of hours of work, they fixed the problem by stringing guide ropes along the hallways and ropes around their waist that hooked and slid along the guide ropes. These kept them from falling as they went about their chores and the ark would suddenly lurch upward, downward, or in a sideways direction. Sometimes it felt like they had gone over a very tall wave and then plunged deep into water; but the ark always steadied itself and continued on its journey. For forty days and forty nights the rain fell upon the ark like the raging torrents of a massive waterfall only this downpour was falling relentlessly everywhere upon the Earth. The rain fell until no land was visible as even the tallest mountain tops were more than 50 feet below the surface of the water. **18**

The animals did not seem to be as troubled as the human passengers on the ark were. Noah began to note that at times a strange thing occurred; all the animals would suddenly hurry to their stalls and cages. Right after that, the ark would be tossed about by strong and violent waves. Right after such an occurrence, Ham came up from a lower deck complaining that he was knocked against a wall as one of the animals ran into him at full gait running to its stall. To make things worse, he was not able to get hold of a safety rope in time and was tossed over twenty feet down the hallway. If it were not for landing in a pile of straw, he would have several broken bones. Then he admitted that he had forgotten to fasten his safety rope. Noah gathered the others and explained a new plan to tackle the problem of the ark swaying and possibly causing serious injury to any of them. He told everyone to continually watch the animals and if they saw all the animals starting to go to their places on their own, everyone needed to immediately stop what they were doing and quickly get to places where they could hold on and not be injured by the waters' action on the ark.

“But, what are we to do if all the animals are already in their stales? What is to warn us then?” asked Shem.

After a brief discussion, it was decided that they should have a dog, cat, or other small animal as a pet to go with each of them while they were going about the ark. If the ark was about to be jolted by turbulent water, they would be warned when the pet would struggle to run to its shelter. When this happened, they would know to get to a secure place themselves and hold their pet in their laps until the ark settled back down. After further discussion, they decided to build a series of bells connected by twine that could sound an alarm throughout the ark. Only one person had to have a pet with them, and they could sound the alarm for everyone’s protection. Shem’s wife however continued to always have her pet dog with her wherever she went. Japheth’s wife favored cats so a pair of them followed her around and she would often treat them with some cheese they had stored on board or a saucer of fresh milk from the oxen on the second deck. The others were glad when the alarm system was installed for many of the animals, they had chosen for pets, were not very cooperative. In fact, some pets made getting their chores done quite difficult as they had to tug their pet’s lease or chase after it as it did not want to go where the person needed to go.

Noah marked the passing of time each day. Everyone was kept busy maintaining the animals. The very nature of some of the animals was changed. The large flesh-eating beasts like the lion and bear ate hay like the oxen and never once tried to attack any other animal or person. There were different kinds of snakes and insects that seemed to find their own place to stay out of the way of other creatures. It was a lot of fun to watch the various animals play and scamper about. The birds flew everywhere from deck to deck, but the larger animals seemed content to stay on their own deck. The

The Beginning of the Beginning

rain finally stopped after a full forty days and nights. They continued to mark time and as another one hundred and fifty days passed, they felt the ark jolt as more and more it bumped against a mountaintop. Soon more landmasses began to break the surface of the waters. Finally, they all felt a hard jolt and heard a loud scrapping noise as the ark slowly came to a stop and rested on a flat area on the side of a mountain.

After patiently waiting, Noah finally opened the window and looked about. He then took a raven in his hands and tossed it into the air. The raven circled the ark and flew off toward the rocky top of a mountain Noah could barely see in the distance. He waited for many hours, but the raven did not return. Seven days later as Noah stood at the open window; a little dove flew up to him and landed on his shoulder.

"So, you want to go and look around out there?" he asked the dove. He held up his hand in front of the dove and it jumped onto it clinging to his fingers. "Okay, fly and see if you find some dry land."

He tossed the dove into the air and it flew off. After circling the area for several hours, it returned to the ark and landed by the window. Noah brought it back into the ark and closed the window. After another seven days, he opened the window and sent the dove back out. This time after being gone nearly the whole day, it returned just as the sun was setting. The dove landed on Noah's hand and as he pulled the dove into the ark, he saw a green leaf from an olive tree in its beak. Then Noah knew the waters were not only going down, but plants and trees were growing back. After still another week he sent the dove back out and this time the dove did not return. Noah went down to his study, closed the door, and began to pray. As he finished his prayer, he heard a familiar voice answering his prayer.

Yeshua told him, *“Go out of the ark, you and your wife, and your sons and your sons’ wives with you. Bring out with you every living thing of all flesh that is with you: birds and cattle and every creeping thing that creeps on the Earth, so that they may abound on the Earth, and be fruitful and multiply on the Earth.”*

Noah went out of his study and called all of his family to come to him. When they all stood around him, he announced the news.

"It is time to reclaim the Earth and to release the animals so they can repopulate their kind," Noah announced.

"How do we open the door?" Ham asked.

"Let us see," Noah answered as he and the others headed to the door on the second level.

This time the locking beams easily slipped out of the way. Then all three sons put their shoulders to the door and pushed. Nothing happened. Then Noah added his shoulder to that of his sons and pushed. Ever so slowly, a gap appeared as the door began to swing open and its weight carried it onward until it was fully open. They took boards that they had stored for this event and began sliding them out from the ark onto dry land. They saw that the terrain was nearly flat where they were and the slope from the ark to the ground was far less than when they had built the ark.

Just after the sons finished building the ramp from the ark to the ground, the wives went from top to bottom opening the stalls and cages for all the animals. The animals were making a lot of noise but none left their place until the ramp was secure. First out were the birds and other flying creatures. Then they heard the sound of heavy huffs coming their way. They stood to the side of the door opening as the large animals from the lower deck appeared at the

The Beginning of the Beginning

doorway and quickly lumbered down the ramp and headed off down the mountain toward the plains below. The second deck also quickly emptied with the lion pair being the first to depart. The third deck's animals ran down the ramp nervously looking about for predators and then scampering off searching for bushes or trees. Then the small insects and creeping creatures and snakes and other reptiles and slithery creatures came out from their hiding places and made their way off the ark.

As Noah stood watching the animals depart, he heard a humming noise and turned his head to see two hummingbirds hovering a few inches away. They seemed to be thanking him for the wonderful cruise they had enjoyed but it was time to depart. He smiled and began to walk down the ramp. When he had walked for about five minutes, he stopped and turned around. He looked back at the ark. His head turned to the left and moved to the right as he took in the sight. It had been an incredible immense and complex undertaking, but now it was small in comparisons with the task before him of reestablishing mankind on the face of the entire Earth. He slowly turned back to look out upon the lands below the mountain range he was standing on. How could he complete this?

Noah and his sons gathered stones and built an altar. After covering it with wood they collected, one of each of the animals that Elohim had told them to take seven pairs along with a bird of each type of bird that they had also taken seven pairs. These were killed and dressed out as Elohim had taught them and then placed on the altar and Noah offered a thanksgiving sacrifice to Elohim. **19**

From the third heaven, Yeshua and Yah smelled the sweet aroma of the burnt offering. Yah turned to Yeshua and said, "***I will not curse the ground because of mankind's behavior for their imagination is evil from their youth. I will never destroy every living thing as I have done with the flood.***"

As Noah and his sons and their wives stood by the altar near the ark, they all heard the voice of Yeshua Elohim,

"Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the Earth and the fear of you and the dread of you shall be on every beast of the Earth, on every bird of the air, on all that move on the Earth, and on all the fish of the sea. They are given into your hand. Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you. I have given you all things, even as the green herbs. But you shall not eat flesh with its life, that is, its blood. Surely for your lifeblood I will demand a reckoning; from the hand of every beast I will require it, and from the hand of man. From the hand of every man's brother I will require the life of man. Whoever sheds man's blood, by man his blood shall be shed; for in the image of Elohim He made man. And as for you, be fruitful and multiply; bring forth abundantly in the Earth and multiply in it."

"And as for Me, behold, I establish My covenant with you and with your descendants after you, and with every living creature that is with you: the birds, the cattle, and every beast of the Earth with you, of all that go out of the ark, every beast of the Earth. Thus, I establish My covenant with you: Never again shall all flesh be cut off by the waters of the flood; never again shall there be a flood to destroy the Earth. This is the sign of the covenant which I make between Me and you, and every living creature that is with you, for perpetual generations: I set My rainbow in the cloud, and it shall be for

The Beginning of the Beginning

the sign of the covenant between Me and the Earth. It shall be, when I bring a cloud over the Earth, that the rainbow shall be seen in the cloud; and I will remember My covenant which is between Me and you and every living creature of all flesh; the waters shall never again become a flood to destroy all flesh. The rainbow shall be in the cloud, and I will look on it to remember the everlasting covenant between Elohim and every living creature of all flesh that is on the Earth. This is the sign of the covenant which I have established between Me and all flesh that is on the Earth.” (Genesis 9:1-17, NKJV)

High above the sacrifice, they saw a multi-colored ribbon forming a great arch, a rainbow that spread from the east to the west. The blues, greens, yellows, reds, and other colors were bright and beautiful to behold. Finally, they re-entered the ark and began discussing plans to build homes and other buildings as well as to plant crops. This continued at dinnertime and then on into the night.

Chapter 40

After the Flood

The next morning, they began to remove some of the wood from the inside of the ark to be used to construct homes to live in. Noah's home was in the center and the other three were within eyesight of it and each other very much as they had built in the valley before the flood. They found the soil very fertile and crops planted from the seeds they had taken with them on the ark sprouted and grew quickly providing them with fresh vegetables. They planted vineyards and orchards of various fruit trees. There was still enough food from what they had taken on the ark to last several years, but they looked forward to the fresh crops they would harvest in the fall.

The three sons of Noah and their wives began the generations of all living human beings after the flood. Elohim had commanded them to multiply. They multiplied rapidly and then the next generation also rapidly grew in number. In less time than it took to reach a population of one hundred it increased again to over a thousand and continued its rapid increase as generations passed.

As the years quickly passed, Noah began to spend his days primarily doing the two things he enjoyed most. He had planted rows of grape seeds and had patiently worked the ground about the vines. In time, the vines matured into a vineyard and with the harvest, he made a delicious wine that all enjoyed with meals. The second thing he enjoyed was telling the children born to his sons' wives, tales about the past, about the giants that once roamed the Earth and about building the ark. He also taught them the things he had learned from Elohim: What was right and wrong and about giving offerings to Elohim for thanksgiving and for sin offerings to

show you were sorry for doing wrong. Years quickly passed for Noah and it seemed like it had only been few years when he realized that his great grandchildren had grown to adulthood and now had children of their own.

Noah had worked hard in the vineyard one day and came back to the tent he had made to shade him from the heat of the sun and where he could rest and take a nap before finishing the day's toil and then heading back home. He sat down and removed his shirt and wiped off the sweat that dripped from his body. He took a flask of wine, poured it into a cup, and began drinking it. His wife Sehaj came into the tent. They both began to enjoy the taste of the wine Noah had made from his vineyard. As the wine began to make him tipsy, he began to play around with Sehaj desiring to have sexual relations with her.

Outside of the tent, Noah's son Ham heard the noise and peeked through an opening in the tent's doorway. He became aroused sexually as he watched his father who continued to drink wine as he undressed himself and his wife, Sehaj, in order to have sexual intercourse with her. Sehaj had remained young looking even though she had borne three sons to Noah and had had endured the years of building the ark and then starting a new life after the flood. Noah had become so drunk on wine that he passed out as he reached out to take Sehaj in his arms. Sehaj lay there holding Noah in her arms and affectionately kissed him while he slept.

For years, Ham had felt that his father, Noah, had favored his two brothers, Shem and Japheth. As things were divided among the sons, Ham felt his share was inferior or not as much as either of his brothers. In his anger and lust, he decided to usurp his father's authority and make himself an equal. He would do this by taking his father's wife, Sehaj. Even though she was his mother, she was still

The Beginning of the Beginning

a very beautiful woman. Now, was the chance he had been looking for. He rushed into the tent and stripped off his garments as he walked toward his parents. Sehaj was startled and attempted to cover herself with her loose garment. She told him to leave. Ham ignored her pleadings and pushed Noah aside. He jerked the garment off Sehaj and fell upon her. He was much stronger than she was and he easily held both her arms over her head. With the other arm and with his legs, he spread her legs apart and raped her. She was delirious and virtually incoherent as Ham finished his abuse and stood up. He felt drunk with power as he dressed and left the tent.

Sehaj had passed out when Ham had attacked her. She could not fathom what her son was trying to do to her. She awoke and began to quickly dress. Noah regained some consciousness and asked her what was wrong as he heard and then saw her crying. She could only say, "Ham, Ham has shamed me," as she then ran from the tent. Noah tried to sit up but again passed out from the effects of the wine he had drunk.

Ham had seen Sehaj flee from the tent and went to see if Noah had awakened. Then he went and found his two brothers, Shem and Japheth and told them he was now equal with their father as he had taken Noah's wife. He showed them the outer garment his father usually wore when working in his vineyard. His two brothers were indignant toward Ham and grabbed the garment. They told him that it was evil and a shameful sin that he had done. They took the garment and entered the tent walking backward with their faces looking outward so as to not see their father lying there naked. They covered his body and then left. When Noah woke up again, he had sobered up. Then he remembered what Sehaj had told him. Noah dressed and then called his sons to the tent. Only Shem and Japheth came. He demanded that they tell him what they knew about the incident.

Ham had gone away into the wilderness where no one could find him. Ham was the strongest of his brothers and even Noah. Yet, he feared that if his brothers and Noah came after him, he would not be able to withstand them. After several months, he learned that Sehaj was with child, his child. After the child was born, he learned that it was a boy. Ham saw Shem one night and told him that his son was to be called Canaan. Shem went to Noah and told him that he had seen and talked with Ham. He told him that the child was to be called Canaan. He apologized that he had not been able to apprehend Ham and bring him back to be judged by Noah for the wicked thing he had done.

Soon, after the child was born, Noah called his family to him. They all met around a large bonfire. Sehaj held the child in her arms. While she despised what her son, Ham had done, she did not take her anger out on the child, as it was not his fault. Then Noah took the child in both of his hands and raised both of his arms upward. Then he prophesized a curse on the child, Canaan, for the disgraceful behavior of his father, Ham. Rather than becoming an equal as Ham had tried to make of himself and his offspring, they would be condemned to serve the others.

“Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants he shall be to his brethren.” And he said: “Blessed be the Lord, the Elohim of Shem, and may Canaan be his servant. May Elohim enlarge Japheth, and may he dwell in the tents of Shem; and may Canaan be his servant.” (Genesis 9:25 - 27, NKJV)

After the flood, Noah lived another three hundred and fifty years. He lived to see the population of the Earth grow into the millions from his sons and their son's sons for hundreds of generations. Each time it rained, he always looked to the sky and

The Beginning of the Beginning

found the rainbow shining. He would then offer a prayer of thanksgiving for Elohim's miraculous intervention in saving his life and the lives of the other seven in the ark.

Once every fifty years he would climb back up the mountain passes and look upon the ark. Its gopher wood hull looked like it would last for thousands of years. On his last trip up to the ark, he found that others had nearly stripped all the boards from inside it to build other things. The outside wood had become as hard as rock so none bothered it. At first, he was saddened to see it being taken apart, but then he realized that it had served its purpose and could now be useful for other things. At his death, Noah had reached the ripe old age of nine hundred and fifty years.

Part Seven: From the Flood to Abraham

Chapter 41

Nimrod Builds His Kingdom

After the flood, the population of the world grew exponentially as the families of Noah's three sons continued to move outward from the mountains and valleys surrounding Mt. Ararat. In just a few hundred years, the areas of the world we know today as Georgia (southern Russia), northern Iran, Syria, eastern Turkey, and the Nile valley were populated. The Anatolian and Iranian peninsulas, Ethiopia, and Arabia had settlements but by far the greatest number began to congregate in the lower regions of Mesopotamia.

About a thousand years after the flood, a son of Cush born in Ethiopia named Nimrod began to travel throughout the populated areas of the Earth. He found that in many areas the population of large carnivorous beasts had grown immensely and were preying on people as well as animals for food. Nimrod made a name for himself as he was as fierce as the beasts and developed new weapons to kill them thus protecting the people of various cities. His renown was so great many cities erected statues of him and praised him as their savior and protector in place of Elohim. He formed a band of hunters and taught his craft to them and contracted protection to numerous cities for gold. His band of hunters grew and became an army. The army became quite large and as they killed off the wild beast, their business of protecting the cities began to dwindle. This worked right into Nimrod's ultimate plans to conquer the known world. **20**

Nimrod used his gold to build ships and then sailed up the Persian Gulf and descended on the seven cities built near the head of the Persian Gulf. Attacking the cities was not difficult as most cities were not fortified nor had their citizens thought to establish a large

organized defensive force to protect themselves from such an onslaught. During the initial stages of conquering the various cities, Nimrod fell in love with a harlot named Semiramis in the city of Erech and took her for his wife. While her beauty dazzled him, it was her mystic religion that really captivated him and was just the thing he needed to maintain control of the masses he conquered. The people he ruled learned under the lash to follow his commands and accept the new religion as well. Nimrod was heralded by the cities he conquered as a mighty hunter who was a god on Earth and his wife was called the "Queen of Heaven" high priestess of the Mystery Religion of his Babylonian empire. To teach the people that Nimrod's power reached into the heavens above, all were taught to bow to the image of Orion, the 'hunter' formed by the stars each night.

As Nimrod's army reached out and subdued surrounding regions, many were brought back to his Crown City, Babylon, as slaves to build his palaces and temples where the people worshipped him and his wife as gods. In the splendor of the temples, Semiramis taught the people through her hierarchy of priests and priestesses to worship Satan through pagan rituals, which included orgies and human sacrifices.

During one ritual, she sat on her throne watching a young girl being sexually and physically abused by several of her priests. The girl cried in pain and anguish and then the priests tied her hands and feet and placed her on an altar preparing to cut out her heart while she was alive to give a blood offering to Semiramis and their god, Nimrod. Just before the knife was to fall, in despair the girl cried out, "You will pay for this evil when the Elohim of heaven kills you all by drowning the world in another flood."

The Beginning of the Beginning

After the girl was slain, Semiramis became troubled and questioned others to find out what the girl meant by a flood to drown the world. One of her priests told her what he thought was a myth about a time in which the heavens rained non-stop for many days and covered the world in a flood that drowned everyone and all beasts and creatures that breathed air. How then are there people and creatures alive now if the flood killed everyone she asked? The priest speculated that some built strong boats and survived. How then did the animals survive she continued to ask becoming even more troubled? The priest then retorted that they must have built large boats and carried some of them aboard. Then he assured her that the flood was probably not worldwide but regionally and came with such fury that people could not travel to safety fast enough so most but not all drowned.

Semiramis took her concerns to her husband Nimrod and asked if he had ever heard such a tale. He surprised her by saying he had heard such as boy from his grandfather, Ham, who claimed to have actually been one of the survivors of the flood. The light of joy went out of Semiramis' eyes and she became very depressed and withdrew from everyone. She could not get the worry of another flood out of her mind despite Nimrod's assurance that the rainbow that appeared after each rainstorm was a sign that the Elohim of heaven would never send another flood. Though neither fully believed in an Elohim of such great power, down deep they had worries that there just might be an Elohim somewhere and that judgment awaited them. Nevertheless, they were young and thought they would live forever and never face punishment for their actions. Nimrod finally decided to end Semiramis' obsession with the chance of another flood.

The Tower of Babel

"We will build a tower that will reach into the heavens so that even an Elohim will not be able to kill us by a flood," he announced to her.

This snapped her out of her gloom and she slowly returned to her old self. She watched as the new tower rose from its deep and massive foundation from bedrock toward the sky. Nimrod also improved the roads built connecting the larger cities of Babel, Erech, Accad, Calneh, and as far as the cities of Rehoboth, Calah, Resen, and the great city of Nineveh. He wanted a sure path to speed his armies to any city in case of unrest but he used the excuse that this was so their citizens could rush to the tower in case a flood did come again.

The tower was enormous. On each level, there were rooms to store food and livestock as well as dwellings for people. There were two ramps on the inside and two on the outside for people and wagons pulled by oxen to go from level to level. One pair of ramps was for traffic going upward and the other was for traffic going downward. In case of the need to get everyone inside very fast all ramps could be used to go upwards, as all traffic would be going one way.

A great horn and a pit for a signal fire were built on the top as each level was completed and was sounded and lit so the people could practice rushing from every city to the tower. Each time they completed a new level and had a practice, dozens would be trampled to death for the people had been told of the flood and were fearful that it was coming and the only way to survive was to get up the tower as high as possible. As the years went by and the tower grew ever higher, the people still ran berserk and packed the tower often

The Beginning of the Beginning

trampling the older ones and some children to death. Semiramis would laugh each time the great horn sounded and they lit the signal fire as she watched the panicked people desperately striving to gain the highest place they could reach on the tower.

On one such occasion she looked out for miles about the tower and downward for hundreds of feet to see people that looked like ants below her. Turning to Nimrod she announced, “Not even Elohim can touch us here. We will conquer the world and all will worship us.”

“Yes,” Nimrod agreed, “all the world will know of us and will come to the tower to worship us. Even now, our fame has reached people far beyond our border. As they see the tower rising higher on the horizon, they are coming to see its wonder and then many are staying to serve us of their own choosing. Soon the world and all that is in it will be ours for all eternity.”

Nimrod continually searched the world to find and then bring to Babylon all the wizards, alchemist, sorcerers, and science masters of the world. These developed new forms of weaponry that had never been seen before. One discovery that gave his armies complete domination over enemies was a black powder that caused an enormous explosion when the flame of the fuse reached its powder packed in various size barrels. Several of the scientists were working on various methods to enable a man to fly like a bird. They used the tower for test flights. They launched numerous craft that fell to ground maiming or killing its pilot. The few that glided successfully could never attain a height greater than the launching point. With the help of the alchemist and their black powder, they were trying to develop a means to propel the craft into the sky. Each attempt so far had blown up before launching or flew uncontrollable up as far as a thousand feet then dived down in erratic circles finally blowing up

killing the pilot and destroying the craft. Still, they were optimistic that in time they would be able to build a manned craft that would fly great distances. It could be used to scout enemy positions and some thought a large enough craft could carry several people besides the pilot and they could drop barrels of black powder to explode on impact on enemy weapons such as catapults or even warriors.

Other alchemist, sorcerers, and wizards developed elixirs and drugs that caused hallucinations and some that seemed to heal certain diseases. Semiramis had them create potions and lotions that kept her looking young. She gave potions to Nimrod that gave him vitality and strength of men years younger and some gave him an uncontrollable desire for every form of deviant sex they could imagine. Some put him to sleep and while he was unconscious, she would play the harlot and have perverted sex with other men and women of the cities.

Chapter 42

The Kingdom of Semiramis

Semiramis became pregnant whether by Nimrod or someone else she did not really know and had a son she named Tammuz. Her attention and affection grew for Tammuz and waned for Nimrod. Slowly, Nimrod grew jealous of the child and began to suspect that he might not be the father. Through her power over her priests, she planned to kill Nimrod during the New Year's festivities held on the top level of the tower. Each year all the participants drank strong drink and took psychedelic and hallucinogenic drugs as the party became an orgy culminating with a year-old ram being torn limb from limb and while still alive while the people would eat the raw flesh and drink its blood.

At this year's orgy, Semiramis executed a secret plan. When it was time for sacrificing the ram, the priests surrounded and then bound Nimrod, as he lay somewhat dazed by the drugs Semiramis had given him. Then they hung his body in the air. His arms were spread wide above his head and his feet were off the ground held by bindings.

Then Semiramis took a knife and began peeling the skin off his chest. Then her priests in a diabolical frenzy began to slash and tear his body apart. While he was still alive, the rest of the drug-crazed people grabbed the pieces of his flesh the priest threw to them. Savagely, as cannibals, they ate his raw flesh as he died. Then his blood that had been drained into a golden basin was put in goblets and passed around for them to drink.

Semiramis had returned to her throne and with Tammuz at her side watched the spectacle. She had cheered as a priest just before Nimrod fully lost consciousness plunged a knife into his chest and cut out his beating heart. They held this high as they carried it to Semiramis. Then Semiramis and Tammuz stood before their worshipers and ate the heart of Nimrod. They completed the ceremony by drinking his blood from a golden goblet.

Thus, Semiramis began her reign. She had all the people worship her and her son. She became known as the “Mother of god” and her son was called the “son of god.” She began a celebration in the spring that she dedicated to her son. On this day, everyone would assemble before sunrise and face the east. When the sun’s first rays began to light the eastern sky they would begin, shouting praises to Tammuz until the sun rose above the horizon.

Tammuz became so much like Nimrod that soon none doubted who his father was. As he grew to manhood, he was even taller and stronger than Nimrod and twice as fierce and ruthless. He was so mean and cruel that everyone trembled when even his shadow passed nearby. The depths of depravity were extended beyond those of his father and were relished by his mother who took part with great delight. There were no boundaries to their sexual lusts and perversions that included children and even each other in the unbelievably vile and twisted acts they performed in the open for all to see and do as well. Their acts were part of their evil religion called Mystery Babylon.

The work continued on the tower and as it grew higher, the evil of Semiramis and Tammuz seemed to multiply beyond sexual immorality and included ever-increasing levels of depraved human torture and killing of men, women, and children. Beside the alarm bell and signal fire that was erected on each succeeding top-level,

The Beginning of the Beginning

altars were now constructed. One man and one woman were sacrificed for each level of the tower along with an infant that was burned alive in honor of themselves who were celebrated as the gods of their Mystery Babylon religion. At the conclusion of these ceremonies, Tammuz would shoot an arrow upwards into the clouds, laugh, curse at the unknown gods of the universe, and proclaim himself as the greatest of the gods of this world and all worlds for all to worship.

Yeshua looked down upon the world and shook His head at the evil that was being done. He described it to Yah who could not look upon such or He would have instantly destroyed the whole planet to a worthless piece of cinder.

“So, they think they are safe in their great tower?” Yah mused.

“I am not concerned about the tower,” Yeshua replied, *“It is the spread of that evil perverted religion that is twisting everything we have taught mankind.”*

“The new forms of weapons and the explosives are so powerful that no humans can withstand their armies,” Yah pondered, *“soon the entire world of man will come under submission to this great evil.”*

“Unless we do something,” Yeshua considered, *“there is no end to what they may do. A world ruled by Tammuz and Semiramis and following their way is not a world that should continue to exist for it*

will increase in evil until it totally consumes all life leaving only death and destruction.”

“We ended the first world when it had reached a point of no return with water. Let us find those who have not been corrupted and protect them and this time rain down fire and brimstone to destroy the tower and the cities of all who are part of this great evil,” Yah suggested.

“That might stop this group but then what is to stop the next one,” Yeshua thought aloud then an idea came to his mind, *“I think I have a better idea. Let us change their languages so they cannot understand what others are saying. This will break up the groups into separate nations and it will take millennia for them to learn each other’s language. Even so, they will never really trust others whom they cannot understand. Each will have cultures and unique histories that will keep them from effectively trying to work together again.”*

“A marvelous idea,” Yah exclaimed, *“we can give them so many different languages that no group will be large enough to gain control of another for many years to come. This will provide the time for those who follow our way to increase. I can see a nation forming from the prodigy of one man becoming a light to the entire world to show how the people can receive blessing for obedience to us rather than curses that come automatically as the result of evil behavior. This will give mankind another chance without destroying most of them.”*

“Indeed, mankind has a heart that naturally seeks those things that are sensual or self-indulgent thinking first of self and then of others to an extreme. Let us watch them closely to find a man who has a different disposition. One with a heart like ours that cares for

The Beginning of the Beginning

others and seeks to gain increase so that he may share it with others as well as enjoy it himself. One who will follow Our way in righteousness. Then we will bless him and his progeny so they in turn can bring our blessings on all people,” Yeshua concluded.

After fully considering the concept and working out all the different languages, they were ready to implement the plan. They had also decided to pass judgment on Semiramis and Tammuz for their evil ways and perverted religion. To punish Semiramis they would have her son killed. They saw that left unchecked Tammuz would be even more evil and perverted than his mother and would lead the people who followed him to ever-unparalleled depths of depravity.

Chapter 43

The Dividing of Languages

Yeshua sent Gabriel to a young man who was the great, great grandson of Shem and who was devotedly following the way of righteousness. Peleg was walking down a road humming a tune when he realized that he was not walking alone.

“Oh, excuse me;” he said politely, “I didn’t realize I wasn’t alone. Hope I didn’t annoy you with my noise.”

“Not at all,” the man now walking beside him said with a deep voice, “it was actually very pleasant.”

“It helps me pass the time as I journey,” Peleg continued, “I am going to visit my uncle and his family.”

“Peleg,” the stranger announced, “Elohim wants you to do something for Him.”

“How do you know my name?” Peleg said very startled at the announcement, “who are you?”

“I am Gabriel, Great Archangel of Almighty Elohim,” he proclaimed as his countenance suddenly glowed even in full sunlight.

“Oh my,” Peleg’s voice came out barely above a whisper as he fell to the ground before the angel.

“Stand up and listen Peleg²¹,” Gabriel said as he took his arms and helped him back to his feet. “There is an evil spreading across the land and Elohim is going to put a stop to it. In two days, the languages of the people will be divided so that few can understand each other.”

“You mean I won’t be able to understand my family?” he questioned.

“Those of close families will speak the same tongue but beyond those of your father’s house including his brother’s family you will not be able to understand other people nor will they be able to understand you. This will be the manner that the people of the entire world will be divided,” Gabriel clarified. Peleg wrinkled his brow and slowly shook his head in wonder as he considered these things.

“That’s going to happen to everyone, but how does that involve me? What does Elohim want me to do?” he asked.

“You must continue your journey but not to your uncle’s house. You are to travel to Babylon, to the tower.”

“That is a terrible and most evil place. I have never been near there and I do not ever want to go there,” he pleaded, “I have heard of some of the horrible things they do there. They would quickly see that I am not like them and would murder me.”

“Do not be afraid,” Gabriel comforted him, “Elohim will protect you. Take this short spear,” he said as he pulled a spear that was about three feet long from his garments and handed it to him as he instructed him in what he was to do.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Whatever my Lord tells me to do that I will do,” Peleg resolved.

To Semiramis it seemed like nothing could stop her from gaining control of the entire world until a fateful day arrived. All the people were called to the tower to celebrate Tammuz’s birthday with a drunken orgy. As the evening darkness began to settled, torches were lighted so the activities taking place on the tower could continue unabated all night. The riot and revelry were highlighted by fireworks that were set off lighting the sky with explosions and sparkling flares.

Unnoticed, a young man walked into the tower and began climbing its ramps toward the top floor where Semiramis and Tammuz lead the celebration. No one took notice of him as he ascended. As he reached each higher level, his determination grew stronger. He had to lower his eyes or look to the side to keep from viewing the horrible evil behavior of the masses on each level. Tears often filled his eyes and he sighed heavily for he knew this behavior was destroying the lives of all who took part. When he finally reached the top level, he looked about and saw Semiramis lounging on a bed completely naked and drunk reveling with other men and women in an orgy. Nearby, he saw Tammuz drinking from a golden goblet as strong drink spilled all over him and others all around him. All were laughing as they tried to outdo each other in perverted acts.

The young man said a short prayer asking for Elohim’s strength to complete his mission. He then went directly beside the lounge Tammuz was lying on and when he was within arm’s reach quickly pulled out the spear and shouted, “The Lord rebuke you.” Those nearby turned as he raised the spear. Tammuz lay there half-drunk

and started to laugh, as he looked at the young man with the short spear in hand whom he thought he could kill with a flick of his wrist.

As Tammuz looked into Peleg's eyes, he saw in those eyes a vision of a wrathful Elohim and for the first-time fear that he had never before experienced filled his body. He was so struck by terror that he could not move or utter a sound as Peleg thrust the spear deep into Tammuz's chest ripping his heart apart. At that very moment lightning flashed from the sky so bright it temporarily blinded everyone on the top level and thunder sounded so loud no one could hear anything for nearly a minute. During this time, the young man whose name was Peleg, the great, great grandson of Shem had left the top level. He calmly walked down the tower's ramps leaving a scene of unbridled terror and mayhem in his wake.

It had happened so fast those close by Tammuz did not seem to realize that Tammuz lay convulsing in agony as he died of total heart failure from the stab wound. As their sight and hearing returned, they drunkenly started to go back to their revelry. Semiramis had gotten up and staggered to where Tammuz lay. She was still half blinded from the lightning flash and when she reached him at first, she thought he was passed out from drink but then saw the blood and the shaft of the spear sticking out of his chest.

She shrieked and called for help to try to revive him, but others looked at her with a confused wide-eyed expression, shook their heads, and then started jabbering and making sounds, she did not understand. Slowly the whole tower was bedlam as everyone began to realize they could not understand most of the people about them. This quickly sobered them as they began to gather with others they could understand. Soon small groups of people that understood each other's speech began running down the ramps and away from the

The Beginning of the Beginning

tower. Fear and suspicion replaced the revelry. One thing filled their minds and that was to get away from the tower before something even more terrifying happened. All went quickly to their homes and got their possessions and began traveling as far away from that area as they could. **22**

Only Semiramis and those few who could speak her language remained in Babylon. They were so few they could not restrain those who wanted to leave. The tower was abandoned and everyone had a new name for that cursed monstrous structure of a tower. It became known as the Tower of Babel. While Semiramis was able to rebuild some of her powerbase, the glory of her pre-Babel kingdom was never re-attained.

She added a new myth to her religion declaring that her son, Tammuz, was slain and then was reborn as an evergreen tree. Each year to celebrate his birthday at the winter solstice she had her followers cut an evergreen tree from the forest. Then they fastened boards at its base so they could set it upright. Next, they would decorate it with gold and silver garlands **23** along with small candles that were lit and topped off with a star at the very top. This would be carried throughout the cities of her kingdom for people to worship as this idol represented a reborn Tammuz.

Her reign began with Nimrod, then with Tammuz, and then finally she ruled alone. The Kingdom of Semiramis lasted for just over one hundred years and was soon forgotten, lost in myth and obscurity. However, Babylon would resurface thousands of years later as a world ruling empire under a king named Nebuchadnezzar. Semiramis' most enduring legacy would be the teachings and rituals of the Mystery Babylonian Religion that would last in many forms under different names until the end of time. Elements of this false

ungodly religion have been mixed in with other religions from the Middle East, to Africa, to Asia, and beyond Europe eventually circling the Earth. It continued to influence many of the rituals practiced by most of the world's religions until the end of time.

Through the millennia of mankind, Satan and his demons worked their deceptive ways into the hearts of all they could influence. Time and again, a man would gather others to him and try to rule the world. This error was bad when it came to the governments of man but when this concept entered the realm of religion it was pure evil. Satan tried to hide the fact that Elohim never intended that any religious group that sought to worship Elohim in spirit and truth would ever band together under one strong central governing body or person. This was the way of Satan. Satan knew that virtually all of human leadership would become corrupt under the right or better stated wrong conditions. He hoped that finally, he could corrupt the followers in religious groups loyal to Elohim even if in the beginning all were faithful to Elohim.

Elohim blessed those small groups and even nations who voluntarily joined with others to do a large work of helping others. However, when someone tried to become a powerful leader and rule over many other smaller groups this brought Elohim's curses upon them all.

As Yeshua and Yah watched humanity grow in number it saddened them as they saw man repeatedly begin to commit that same errors that had nearly destroyed the Earth before Noah and at the Tower of Babel. Kingdoms rose and fell as time passed. Elohim intervened at times to move humanity toward a goal established to

The Beginning of the Beginning

bring redemption from sin and salvation for all who would accept
Their righteous way.

Chapter 44

The Calling of Abram

Gabriel came before Yeshua and Yah very excited. “Great Elohim, I have been watching a man on Earth and he might be the one you have been waiting for.”

“What is this man’s name and where does he live?” asked Yah.

“His name is Abram and he is the son of Terah. He now lives in Haran in the land of Canaan but Abram was born in Ur of the Chaldees.” Gabriel answered.

“I thought he was special,” Yeshua spoke to Yah, *“that is why I asked Gabriel to keep a close eye on him. Tell us about him?”*

“Abram’s father Terah has just died,” Gabriel began, “They named their dwelling place in Canaan after Abram’s brother, Haran, who died before they left Ur. Abram is married to the daughter of one of his brothers some call her his half-sister. Her name is Sarai, and she is barren so they have taken Lot, Haran’s son into their family and raised him as their own.”

“I must personally visit this man,” Yeshua responded.

“Search his heart and try him,” Yah instructed, *“if he is worthy and obeys our laws, we will bless him above all men so that he might teach others our way so they too may be blessed.”*

.....

The stars twinkled above Abram as he knelt upon his knees in prayer. He had walked up into the hills that were near the city of Haran to be alone. Something was heavy on his heart. He had searched his thoughts and actions all week and found them pure and undefiled. Yet, there was a feeling that something was about to happen that would change his life and he wanted to be ready when Elohim revealed it to him. He began his prayer with supplication asking for forgiveness for anything he had done that he was not aware of as well as for grace and mercy upon the members of his family. He thanked Elohim for His goodness and the manifold blessings that Elohim had already given him. As he finished his prayer, he thought of one thing that was missing in his life, a son.

“*Abram,*” Yeshua spoke softly to him, “*Hear me.*”

“Yes, my Lord,” Abram answered as he realized Yeshua was talking to him. He then lowered himself completely lying prostrate on the ground before the voice of Yeshua.

“I want you to leave this place and leave your kindred and those of your father’s house. I want you to go to a land that I will show you. I have heard your prayers and I will give you and wife, Sarai a son in due time. Be assured that your children’s children will become a great nation one-day numbering as the sand on the seashore. I will give you many blessings and your name will be great. Everyone that blesses you will be blessed and those who curse you will receive curses from Me. In time, all the nations of the Earth will be blessed because of you.

Abram considered these things and finally when he was sure he was again alone he slowly rose to his feet still trembling. As he

The Beginning of the Beginning

looked about, he knew that there was no other man on the hill with him. He lifted his eyes toward heaven. He felt so light that he thought a gust of wind might send him sailing into the sky. Yes, he thought, yes, yes. He was almost giddy as he ran back down from the hillside to his home in Haran.

“Sarai, Sarai!” He shouted as he came into the bedroom. Sarai had just gone to sleep and his voice startled her.

“Abram, what is wrong?” she cried out.

“Nothing is wrong. Everything is right,” he said as he lit a bedside lamp.

As quickly as she saw his face, she was no longer afraid, but she was full of wonder, as she had never seen his face so filled with radiant joy.

“The Lord Yeshua spoke to me,” he began, “on the hillside as I prayed. He appeared to me. Oh my, my, the things He said to me.” Abram just sat on the side of the bed just beaming and shaking his head no longer speaking aloud.

“Well, well,” she said taking him by his shoulders shaking him trying to prompt him to continue.

“We are going to have a son,” he finally answered.

“What?” Sarai said somewhat startled, “A son? When? I don’t think I am with child?”

“No,” Abram laughed, “Not right now. In time, in time.”

He finally was able to tell her all that Yeshua had said to him. By then they were both so full of excitement that sleep forsook them and they tossed for several hours until they both decided to get up and start packing. By morning's light, others of the family woke up to the sound of clatter from Abram's house. Nahor, his brother came to the door and knocked. As Sarai opened the door, he said, "What on Earth is going on?"

Abram came from around a pile of things in the middle of the room and began telling Nahor and then others as they too came from their houses to see what was going on in Abram's house. At first, they were all awed by Abram's account of Yeshua speaking to him and then were skeptical and upset when he told them he was leaving. It took a while for the chaos to settle down as they all returned to their homes for breakfast. While Abram and Sarai finished their breakfast, Lot who had overheard all that had been said earlier came back to their house.

"If you are leaving, then I will leave also," he declared.

"Then you had better start packing," Abram responded.

As Abram left Haran, he looked about at the great herd of livestock and those who tended them. He rode on a camel and smiled at Sarai and she smiled back from the camel she rode on. Behind them came Lot's herd and their attendants. Lot and his wife each rode on a camel and their two daughters rode together on another camel. Lot struck his camel with a cane pole to get it to go faster and he soon caught up with Abram.

"This looks like half the city is going with us," he said to Abram as they rode along.

The Beginning of the Beginning

“Yes, Yeshua Elohim has truly blessed us,” Abram responded, “As long as we are faithful to Him these blessings will grow even greater.”

Abram obeyed the word of Yeshua Elohim and went on to traverse from one end to the other in the land Elohim would show him. Abram was not perfect, but he wanted to be and tried very hard to obey Elohim in all that he was commanded. He was to become the ‘Father of the faithful’ and from his seed, the Messiah was eventually born and so all the people of the Earth for all time were truly blessed because of him.

In time, Abram’s name was changed to Abraham. Perhaps the greatest tribute that could ever be given him was being called, ‘A friend of Yeshua.’

Chapter 45

Concluding with the Past (with a brief look into the future)

The rest of Abraham's life as well as the history of Abraham's son, Isaac, and his grandson, Jacob whose name was changed to Israel are presented beginning in the twelfth chapter of the book of Genesis.

In the book of Exodus, we find that Israel's twelve sons became a nation while living in Egypt. After Yeshua freed them from Egyptian bondage, He used Moses to instruct them while He led them to the land of Canaan. Canaan was the exact place where Abraham had walked its length and width during his life and Yeshua had promised the land to his children's children for all generations. The nation of Israel had many ups and downs recorded in the books of the Old Testament Bible. Yeshua had intended this nation to show the world how great it would be blessed as it followed the way of Yeshua. On the other hand, the nation of Israel was warned that if it forsook this way it would be cursed.

Bible history from Genesis to Malachi shows that after becoming the great nation of Israel under the reigns of King David and King Solomon, it was eventually punished for forsaking Elohim and not repenting of its evil ways. The nation was divided shortly after Solomon's son Rehoboam, took the throne. The ten Northern Tribes continued to use the name of Israel and selected a new king, Jeroboam. Elohim actually offered to establish Jeroboam's lineage if he would follow the ways of Elohim. However, Jeroboam listened to the council of others and totally forsook Elohim and His way. The Northern Ten Tribes then known as Israel never fully returned to

Elohim and were first defeated and taken into captivity away from their homeland.

The two Southern Tribes became known as Judah. They oscillated between having good kings, who brought the people back to obeying Elohim and the opposite, having bad kings, who lead the people into disobedience and evil practices. As idolatry and other sinful ways overtook the leaders and people, eventually they also lost their freedom being taken away captives by Babylon lead by King Nebuchadnezzar.

Most of the descendants of Israel totally lost their identity after being taken away in captivity. The prophecies of Jacob in the later chapters of Genesis and other prophecies in the Old Testament have led to speculation by many historical writers of who are the modern-day descendants of the twelve sons of Jacob. The nation of Judah was primarily of the family of Judah but had numerous members of the other eleven tribes especially those of Levi. These have all been called Jews in modern times. They alone have retained their identity to this very day of a nation founded by Elohim.

The New Testament of the Bible leaves the story of the nation Elohim created from the sons of Israel. It begins a narrative of a captive nation under the control of Rome. The four gospel accounts at the beginning tell the story of the birth and ministry of Yahweh's Son, Yeshua Christ. This happens about two thousand years after Abraham. If you read the English translation of the original Hebrew/Aramaic books of the New Testament, you would see our Saviors name was originally Yeshua. The same name as you would find in the Hebrew Old Testament.

How is that most people think His earthly name was Jesus? This was the result of what the Roman Catholic Church did to try to

The Beginning of the Beginning

deceive the world. The original books of the New Testament were written in Hebrew and Aramaic, a sister language to Hebrew. The Catholic Church translated those books into Latin and attempted to destroy all copies of the New Testament in Aramaic. [Thank Elohim that they failed for numerous original copies have been found.] The Catholic Church then transcribed all the Latin New Testament books into koine Greek and spread them throughout the Roman Empire. These were the books modern translators have used to produce most English language translations of the New Testament. The name of Jesus was never in any New Testament Bible published until about 400 years ago. This is easily proven as there was no such letter as a 'J' before that time.

Yet it is a fact that when Yeshua is transliterated from Hebrew to Greek and then to English we find the name Iesus which about 400 years ago was changed to Jesus when the letter 'J' was created and replaced the letter 'I'. So, the name Jesus truly comes indirectly from Yeshua in the Hebrew language. Rather than use a name that is formed by a two-step transliteration process involving Greek, I would rather simply use my Lord's original Hebrew name, Yeshua. I firmly believe that a person can be saved using either name; Yeshua or Jesus from the Holy Bible.

Yeshua [Jesus] was both truly divine and human and paid the ultimate price for mankind's sins. He allowed Himself to be put to death, thus fulfilling the oath He made before He made man from the dust of the ground. As the Creator of all who have ever lived, His life's blood paid the debt in full, so every person who ever lived by accepting Yeshua [Jesus] Christ as their Lord and Savior could be forgiven and washed clean of their sins forever as they faithfully followed on the path of righteousness as described in the New Testament.

The grave could not hold Yeshua [Jesus] Christ, as He rose after spending three full days and three full nights in the grave. After forty

more days (primarily residing on Earth with His followers), He then ascended in a cloud leaving His witnesses gazing upward. Therefore, He left this small planet, which circled the sun and He went back to the third heaven to again take His place on His throne on the right side of Yahweh Elohim Almighty. There Yeshua was to wait for just over two thousand years for Yahweh to finally signal the time had come for Him to again return to Earth. The second time He would come as King of Kings, and Lord of Lords.

From the prophecies of the entire Holy Bible, we can read about what will happen before Yeshua returns to the earth. These prophecies are scattered but can be found by diligent searching. A quick overview of what will happen can be found in Matthew chapter 24 and Luke chapter 21. More detailed accounts can be found in Revelation and the book of Daniel. But, this has to do with my next book so I must stop this discussion at this point and close out my story.

I have thus completed the telling of my story: The Beginning of the Beginning as Yahweh has revealed to me in my dreams and as Yeshua has instructed me to do. To what purpose will it chance to fulfill? I believe it will change the lives of all who read it. Most for the better, as mysteries they have had will be solved. Yet, some seem to have trouble accepting the goodness, mercy, and equity of God [Elohim]. I will leave the outcome in Yeshua's capable hands.

REFERENCES and Comments

Please note: the page numbers for these references were correct on my final edit of this book. If changes are subsequently added, page numbers for references may be off by one or more pages.

1. Mankind is the offspring of Elohim.

- *Genesis 1:26-27 (NKJV)*

26Then Elohim said, “Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the Earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the Earth.” 27So Elohim created man in His own image; in the image of Elohim He created him; male and female He created them.

- *Romans 8:14-17 (NKJV)*

14For as many as are led by the Spirit of Elohim, these are sons of Elohim. 15For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, “Abba, Father.” 16The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of Elohim, 17and if children, then heirs—heirs of Elohim and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.

•

2. Elohim has always existed as at least three separate but equal beings.

The plural form of ‘Elohim’ mentioned at the creation of man.

- See *Genesis 1:26-27 (NKJV)* quoted above note: “*Let Us make man in Our image.*”

The existence of the Father and Son as separate entities.

- *John 1:1-3 (NKJV)*

1In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with Elohim, and the Word was Elohim. 2He was in the beginning with Elohim. 3All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made.

- *John 17:1-5 (HRB)*

1Yeshua spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: "Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You, 2as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him. 3And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true Elohim, and Yeshua Christ whom You have sent. 4I have glorified You on the Earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do. 5And now, O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was.

- *Philippians 2:5-6 (NKJV)*

5Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Yeshua, 6who, being in the form of Elohim, did not consider it robbery to be equal with Elohim.

3. The existence of a third Elohim being in the Godhead is a belief that most Christians accept by faith without clear-cut Biblical proof. For those who trust in the Bible as the Word of Elohim and who desire to follow its direction to *"Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. (1 Thessalonians 5:21 KJV)* please read and consider the following discourse.

The Beginning of the Beginning

Can or should a Christian have faith in the doctrine of the Trinity without proof from the Word of Elohim? How can a Christian ignore the following scripture? “*So, then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of Elohim*” (Romans 10:17 KJV.) Elohim’s Word tells us that true faith cannot exist without the Word of Elohim. If a person cannot or does not base their faith in what they have proven directly from the Word of Elohim, they are following man and fabricated traditions rather than Elohim. Yeshua Christ condemned this practice in Mark chapter 7 and we find this admonition in Acts:

29 Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey Elohim [God] rather than men. (Acts 5:29 KJV)

This and the next paragraph might seem a bit abrasive and somewhat insensitive but it is the truth of Elohim and no one should ever apologize for telling the truth. They are written to try to ‘shock’ those readers who have refused to consider the truth of this subject. If you are close-minded, you will not want to admit it. If the following paragraph really irritates you then whether you admit it or not, you are close-minded and may as well not read any further. If you are not close-minded then you will want to read the entire discourse.

The Old Testament clearly refers to the Holy Spirit as a power that worked in the creation and in fulfilling Elohim’s will on Earth. When asked to point out scriptures that support this belief many will turn to the book of John, chapters 14 and 15 as proof that the Holy Spirit is not only a living active force but is also a separate Being or Entity. Yeshua stated that this personal aid and empowering force would fill repentant mortals with the eternal spirit power of Elohim to be reborn as children in the family of Elohim when Christ returns

to Earth at the end of time. Most Christians simply do not believe that there has to be any proof as it is a matter of faith to believe in the existence of the Godhead as a trinity. How can faith exist apart from scripture? The Bible states in 6 separate verses that the truth must be established by two or three witnesses.

So, one's faith needs to be scripturally based not just trusting in 'divine mysteries. Here are two scriptures that provide a witness to the truth as they tear down arguments against the concept that the Holy Spirit is a separate entity as Yeshua is from Elohim the Father.

Ephesians 4:30 NKJV

30And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of Elohim, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption.

Acts 5:3 - 4 NKJV

3But Peter said, "Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and keep back part of the price of the land for yourself? 4While it remained, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not in your own control? Why have you conceived this thing in your heart? You have not lied to men but to Elohim."

How would it be possible to 'grieve' a power or puff of wind? If the Holy Spirit is only a power from Elohim, it would be impossible to '*grieve*' it. Now consider the possibility of trying to '*lie to the Holy Spirit*'. Can a person 'lie' to a power or the wind? No, that is impossible. So, the existence of the Holy Spirit seems to be well established by these two witness scriptures. Consider further that in Acts 5: 4 it says that the Holy Spirit is Elohim because it says the Holy Spirit was lied to in verse 3.

This should be enough to make any Christian wonder if they have been misled concerning this topic. In any case, this is a matter

The Beginning of the Beginning

each person must decide for themselves using the Bible for facts and the Holy Spirit for discernment.

4. Resurrected and transformed Christians at Christ's return actually become members of Elohim's family (see Romans chapter 8 and 1 Corinthians chapter 15). None of these individuals will ever reach the level of power and authority that rests in the Father and the Son alone. Some deceptively say that no one can ever become like Elohim and that the Elohim family is closed. This is not scriptural. Believe the Word of Elohim not the word of man who try to confuse you by twisting scriptures, taking them out of context, or misapplying them.

5. Truth must be established by 2 or 3 witnesses

6. Revelation chapter 21 and 22 describes the city of Elohim, New Jerusalem coming down to Earth from heaven having streets, dwellings, river and trees.

7. Revelation chapter 4 describes the throne room of Elohim.

8. Elohim created thousands of angels and archangels.

- *Revelation 5:11 (NKJV)*

11 Then I looked, and I heard the voice of many angels around the throne, the living creatures, and the elders; and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,

- *Jude 1:9 (NKJV)*

9 Yet Michael the archangel,

- *1 Thessalonians 4:16 (NKJV)*

16 For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel,

9. Prophecies of Lucifer who became Satan. Ezekiel 28: 12 states his creation ‘*sealest up the sum*’ can have a significant meaning. The word ‘*sum*’ used in accounting and mathematics refers to the total amount and is equal to all the other individual items. It is also the last entry when counting anything. While some say these scriptures were only about the king of Tyre, they may also be descriptive of Satan before he rebelled. Most Christians believe that the name Lucifer refers to Satan before his rebellion.

- *Isaiah 14:12-15 (NKJV)*

*12 “How you are fallen from heaven,
O, Lucifer, son of the morning!
How you are cut down to the ground,
You who weakened the nations!*

*13 For you have said in your heart:
‘I will ascend into heaven,
I will exalt my throne above the stars of Elohim;
I will also sit on the mount of the congregation
On the farthest sides of the north;*

*14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds,
I will be like the Most High.’*

*15 Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol,
To the lowest depths of the Pit.*

- *Ezekiel 28:11-19 (NKJV)*

11 Moreover the word of the Lord came to me, saying,

The Beginning of the Beginning

12 “Son of man, take up a lamentation for the king of Tyre,
and say to him, ‘Thus says the Lord Elohim:

“You were the seal of perfection,

[Thou sealest up the sum, KJV]

Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.

13 You were in Eden, the garden of Elohim;
Every precious stone was your covering:
The sardius, topaz, and diamond,
Beryl, onyx, and jasper,
Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold.
The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes
Was prepared for you on the day you were created.

14 “You were the anointed cherub who covers;
I established you;
You were on the holy mountain of Elohim;
You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones.

15 You were perfect in your ways from the day you were
created,
Till iniquity was found in you.

16 “By the abundance of your trading
You became filled with violence within,
And you sinned;
Therefore I cast you as a profane thing
Out of the mountain of Elohim;
And I destroyed you, O covering cherub,
From the midst of the fiery stones.

17 “Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty;
You corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor;
I cast you to the ground,
I laid you before kings,
That they might gaze at you.

*18 “You defiled your sanctuaries
 By the multitude of your iniquities,
 By the iniquity of your trading;
 Therefore I brought fire from your midst;
 It devoured you,
 And I turned you to ashes upon the Earth
 In the sight of all who saw you.
 19 All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at
 you;
 You have become a horror,
 And shall be no more forever.”””*

10. Job chapter 38 describes how Elohim measured and laid out the creation of the Earth and the universe.

11. The Universe and all that is in it was created by the power of Elohim.

Jeremiah 10:12-13 (NKJV)

*12 He has made the Earth by His power,
 He has established the world by His wisdom,
 And has stretched out the heavens at His discretion.*

*13 When He utters His voice,
 There is a multitude of waters in the heavens:
 “And He causes the vapors to ascend from the ends of the
 Earth.
 He makes lightning for the rain,
 He brings the wind out of His treasures.”*

12. The Universe and all that is in it was created by the power of Elohim.

Psalms 8:3 (NKJV)

3 When I consider Your heavens, the work of Your fingers,

The Beginning of the Beginning

The moon and the stars, which You have ordained,

13. The marking of Cain.

Genesis 4:10-15 (NKJV)

10And He said, “What have you done? The voice of your brother’s blood cries out to Me from the ground. 11So now you are cursed from the Earth, which has opened its mouth to receive your brother’s blood from your hand. 12When you till the ground, it shall no longer yield its strength to you. A fugitive and a vagabond you shall be on the Earth.” 13And Cain said to the Lord, “My punishment is greater than I can bear! 14Surely You have driven me out this day from the face of the ground; I shall be hidden from Your face; I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond on the Earth, and it will happen that anyone who finds me will kill me.” 15And the Lord said to him, “Therefore, whoever kills Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold.” And the Lord set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.

14. Cain goes to the east with his wife.

• *Genesis 4:16-17 (NKJV)*

16Then Cain went out from the presence of the Lord and dwelt in the land of Nod on the east of Eden. 17And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived and bore Enoch. And he built a city, and called the name of the city after the name of his son—Enoch.

15. The bragging of Lamech to his wives.

• *Genesis 4:23 - 24 (NKJV)*

23And Lamech said unto his wives, Adah and Zillah, Hear my voice; ye wives of Lamech, hearken unto my speech:

for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. ²⁴If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold.

16. Elohim prepares to destroy the Earth by flood because of rampant evil.

- Genesis 6:1-12 (NKJV)

¹Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the Earth, and daughters were born to them, ²that the sons of Elohim (these were ordinary men not angels. At no time have angels been referred to as ‘sons of Elohim) saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose. ³And the Lord said, “My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years.” ⁴There were giants on the Earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of Elohim came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.

⁵Then the Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great in the Earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. ⁶And the Lord was sorry that He had made man on the Earth, and He was grieved in His heart. ⁷So the Lord said, “I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the Earth, both man and beast, creeping thing and birds of the air, for I am sorry that I have made them.” ⁸But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord.

⁹This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations. Noah walked with Elohim. ¹⁰And Noah begot three sons: Shem, Ham, and Japheth.

The Beginning of the Beginning

11The Earth also was corrupt before Elohim, and the Earth was filled with violence. 12So Elohim looked upon the Earth, and indeed it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted their way on the Earth.

17. Noah builds the ark. (Dimensions in story are approximate.)

- *Genesis 6:13-22 (NKJV)*

13And Elohim said to Noah, “The end of all flesh has come before Me, for the Earth is filled with violence through them; and behold, I will destroy them with the Earth. 14Make yourself an ark of gopherwood; make rooms in the ark, and cover it inside and outside with pitch. 15And this is how you shall make it: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits (300 cubits times 2 ft per cubit = about 600 feet long), its width fifty cubits (50 cubits times 2 ft per cubit = about 100 feet wide) , and its height thirty cubits (30 cubits times 2 ft per cubit = about 60 feet tall). 16You shall make a window for the ark, and you shall finish it to a cubit from above; and set the door of the ark in its side. You shall make it with lower, second, and third decks. 17And behold, I Myself am bringing floodwaters on the Earth, to destroy from under heaven all flesh in which is the breath of life; everything that is on the Earth shall die. 18But I will establish My covenant with you; and you shall go into the ark—you, your sons, your wife, and your sons’ wives with you. 19And of every living thing of all flesh you shall bring two of every sort into the ark, to keep them alive with you; they shall be male and female. 20Of the birds after their kind, of animals after their kind, and of every creeping thing of the Earth after its kind, two of every kind will come to you to keep them alive. 21And you shall take for yourself of all food that is eaten, and you shall

gather it to yourself; and it shall be food for you and for them.” 22Thus Noah did; according to all that Elohim commanded him, so he did.

18. The flood.

- *Genesis chapter 7*

19. After the flood.

- *Genesis chapter 8*

20. The rise of Nimrod and his kingdom.

- *Genesis 10:8-14 (NKJV)*

8Cush begot Nimrod; he began to be a mighty one on the Earth. 9He was a mighty hunter before the Lord; therefore it is said, “Like Nimrod the mighty hunter before (in place of) the Lord.” 10And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, Erech, Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. 11From that land he went to Assyria and built Nineveh, Rehoboth Ir, Calah, 12and Resen between Nineveh and Calah (that is the principal city). 13Mizraim begot Ludim, Anamim, Ehabim, Naphtuhim, 14Pathrusim, and Casluhim (from whom came the Philistines and Caphtorim).

21. During the days of Peleg, the languages of the Earth was divided.

- *Genesis 10:25 (NKJV)*

25To Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg, for in his days the Earth was divided; and his brother’s name was Joktan.

The Beginning of the Beginning

22. The tower of Babel and the dividing of languages.

- *Genesis 11:1-9(NKJV)*

1Now the whole Earth had one language and one speech. 2And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar, and they dwelt there. 3Then they said to one another, "Come, let us make bricks and bake them thoroughly." They had brick for stone, and they had asphalt for mortar. 4And they said, "Come, let us build ourselves a city, and a tower whose top is in the heavens; let us make a name for ourselves, lest we be scattered abroad over the face of the whole Earth." 5But the Lord came down to see the city and the tower which the sons of men had built. 6And the Lord said, "Indeed the people are one and they all have one language, and this is what they begin to do; now nothing that they propose to do will be withheld from them. 7Come, let Us go down and there confuse their language, that they may not understand one another's speech." 8So the Lord scattered them abroad from there over the face of all the Earth, and they ceased building the city. 9Therefore its name is called Babel, because there the Lord confused the language of all the Earth; and from there the Lord scattered them abroad over the face of all the Earth.

23. Warning not to learn ways of the heathen and a reference to a decorated tree that was used in a pagan ritual associated with Astrology or worship of Tammuz as a false god. Pagans used this ritual as part of their worship of false gods. If you do anything described in this ritual for the purpose of worshiping false gods, you are not a Christian. Stop and consider exactly why you do the

things you do. What are your motives? If you follow rituals based on practices established within the last couple of centuries, then that is a whole new ballgame as the saying goes. It simply is different from what was practiced thousands of years ago nor is the motive for doing so the same. Sorry to say, many cults have jumped on this passage to create doubt, confusion, and to deceive decent Christians into believing things that are not true.

- *Jeremiah 10:1-5 (NKJV)*

1Hear the word which the Lord speaks to you, O house of Israel. 2Thus says the Lord:

“Do not learn the way of the Gentiles; Do not be dismayed at the signs of heaven,

For the Gentiles are dismayed at them.

3 For the customs of the peoples are futile;

For one cuts a tree from the forest,

The work of the hands of the workman, with the ax.

4 They decorate it with silver and gold;

They fasten it with nails and hammers

So that it will not topple.

5 They are upright, like a palm tree,

And they cannot speak;

They must be carried,

Because they cannot go by themselves.

Do not be afraid of them,

For they cannot do evil,

Nor can they do any good.”

*The Beginning of the Beginning***About the Author**

The author used the G.I. Bill to go to college and was a National Merit Scholar graduating from the University of Tennessee with a B.S in Operations Research. This was followed in about ten years with a M.S. in Engineering Technology from Eastern Kentucky University.

His primary career was in Industrial Engineering for over 25 years in which he was instrumental in originating and implementing cost reduction projects that saved the companies he worked for hundreds of thousands of dollars in most of those years. Many of these projects involved his inventions of fixtures and new methods of operation and control of processes that not only saved money, they greatly improved the quality of the products manufactured. During his career, he worked with Corporate Presidents, Group and Division Managers, Data Processing Managers, Accountants; on down to plant managers, supervisors, plant work forces, and maintenance in bringing improvements to numerous plants. This required being able to present ideas and concepts that were clearly understood and accepted by everyone at every level.

Before going to college, the author completed two tours of duty in the United States Air Force reaching the rank of E5 Staff Sergeant. During the Viet Nam War, the author was stationed on Okinawa for about three and a half years. His position on an intercontinental missile crew was Mechanic One in charge of and maintaining the operation of inertial guidance and flight controls of four nuclear missiles in one of eight hardened sites over 100 feet below the surface of the island of Okinawa. His position was also part of the launch crew that if war had broken out, he along with the Launch Officer in charge would authenticate the launch orders, and then would together push the buttons to launch the four missiles. He worked his way up to the top position in the Standard Eval Crew as

part of the Inspector General of the Commander in Chief of the Pacific Air Force.

After leaving the Air Force, the author worked in residential and commercial construction several years. He ran a business of building houses and later he ran several crews that excavated and built the framework of concrete forms for residential driveways and then built concrete forms for high-rise buildings. While going to college, the author was nearly always working on remodeling the homes he bought and lived in which doubled his investment when sold. This was used to pay for his college education.

In the Spring of 1994, everything changed for the author. The author experienced what he believed was a vision of a face-to-face meeting with Jesus [Yeshua] Christ. He was told that Christianity had lost its way over the last two thousand years. It had become a religion based on the Traditions of Men not the Truth of God as written in the Word of God, the Holy Bible. He was asked to be Christ's Minister. Then he was told to study the Word of God and write what he learned only from the Holy Scriptures and publish and tell of it to all who would listen. In giving this commission, Jesus [Yeshua] Christ made him Christ's Apostle and Prophet as his writings would present the True Christian Beliefs, Doctrines, and Practices Based on the Holy Scriptures, Not Traditions of Men and would also involve prophetic dreams and visions.

The author was ordained as a Minister in a church organization that he served in for nearly ten years. He continually traveled to congregations in Michigan, Ohio, Indiana, Kentucky, Tennessee, Arkansas, Louisiana, Texas, Georgia, and Florida preaching in different congregations each week. He also went to Canada, Jamaica, Australia, and to many Feast sites preaching what Yeshua [Jesus] Christ revealed to him in the Word of God. The primary comment from individuals in those congregations and meetings was "When is Richard coming back?"

The Beginning of the Beginning

The author left that church organization and has occasionally preached in several independent churches while he concentrated on writing what was revealed to him in the Word of God. He also had been experiencing dreams that inspired him to start writing books. So, far he has written and completed a trilogy called ***The Story of the New Immortals***. The First book is ***Part 1*** and tells about Eternity Past, ***The Beginning of the Beginning***. The Second book is ***Part 2*** and tells about ***The Early Years of the Christ, Including the Missing Years***. The Third book is ***Part 3*** and tells about Eternity Future, ***The End of the Beginning***.

Did you notice that ***Part 2*** about ***The Early Years of the Christ***, is in the middle of this Trilogy? Richard believes that Yeshua [Jesus] Christ should be in the middle of everything we think, say, and do. Read the following verse in your Bible including what follows it. If the mind of God is guiding our lives we will live as Yeshua [Jesus] would in our shoes and be part of the Wedding Supper of the Lamb when He returns.

Philippians 2:5 (NKJV)

⁵Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus,

The Beginning of the Beginning

Books by this author: *Richard O'Decatur*

The Story of the New Immortals, Part 1:

The Beginning of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography
[about 363 Pages]

This story tells of the beginning of all things. We find Elohim [God], the Father, Yahweh; Elohim, the Son, Yeshua [Jesus]; and Elohim, the Holy Spirit having always existed in eternity. In this story, we go back before the creation of the world mentioned in Genesis Chapter 1 into eternity past, when Elohim began creating what is called the third heaven and the angelic beings, and continues to the creation of the earth.

It tells of a Great Archangel, possibly named Lucifer, who got one third of the angelic realm to rebel against Elohim. It presents the creation of the earth, how it became without form and void. It tells of a somewhat re-creation of earth and populating it with all living things and finally the creation Adam and Eve. It tells of their life in the Garden of Eden, ending with their sin of disobedience and being driven from the Garden.

Then it tells of the population of mankind throughout the earth and the growth of evil. Then Noah and his family build the Ark and survive with pairs of animals and birds when the rains came and waters flood the entire earth killing all that breathed air on the face of the earth. It tells of the spread of mankind from Noah's three sons and their wives. Then Nimrod comes on the scene with his wife, Semiramis spreading the Mystery Babylon Pagan religion until the building of tower of Babel and the dividing of the languages

scattering mankind from Mesopotamia. It ends with the calling of Abram [Abraham] mentioned in Genesis Chapter 12.

.....

***The Story of the New Immortals,
Part 2:***

The Early Years of the Christ

***Including
the Missing Years***

A Fictional Biography
[about 348 Pages]

Many of you have read the four gospel accounts of the life of Jesus Christ. You find many gaps in the story of His life from His birth to age thirty when He began His Ministry. Have you ever wondered what events prepared the land of Judea and Galilee for the Christ to be born, grow up, and begin His earthly ministry? Have you ever wondered what life was like for Jesus during His childhood? The Bible only tells us about His birth, then jumps two years to when the Magi came to Bethlehem. Immediately afterwards, the family of the Christ escaped to Egypt. After living for some time in Egypt, they return to Nazareth.

Then we fast-forward nearly ten years to when He was about twelve, when the family goes to Jerusalem for the Passover. The next we read about the life of the Christ, eighteen years have passed and He is about thirty years of age. Jesus is baptized by His second cousin, John the Baptist, and He goes into the wilderness for forty days and nights. What happened during those missing eighteen years

The Beginning of the Beginning

in which he became a teenager, went through life in His twenties, and finally reached the age of thirty where we find Him being baptized?

As we read in the Gospels about Jesus entering the synagogue in Nazareth, we find people do not really know Him except by being associated with His mother, Mary and His brothers and sisters. This gives the impression that Jesus had been away from Nazareth for those eighteen years. I have always wondered who Joseph of Arimathea was and my research has found that he was not only a relative, but played a major role in the early life of Jesus.

I have written a Fictional Biography that I believe will answer these questions and many more. Again, as in my other two books, I have felt God's inspiration in taking on this monumental task. After considerable research, and prayer, my dreams began again as the Holy Spirit guided my mind and my hands as I started writing this story over ten years ago and have recently finished it in 2020.

.....

***The Story of the New Immortals,
Part 3:***

The End of the Beginning

A Fictional Biography
[about 365 Pages]

This story takes place just after Jesus Christ's Second Coming. While it looks back at events that took place before His return, it primarily focuses on the work of the Saints of God the Father, Yahweh; as Jesus Christ reigns from Jerusalem during the Millennium and beyond.

This story tells of the Wedding Supper of the Lamb and those who were resurrected from the dead and those who were transformed in the twinkling of an eye as they celebrate their triumph over sin. It tells of the preparation to attack the forces of Satan as their army closes in on Jerusalem. Then Jesus Christ, King of Kings and Lord of Lords leads the armies from Heaven to the earth. They destroy the two hundred-million-man army of Satan. Satan is captured and bound in chains and is cast into a Pit in Hell. The Antichrist and False Prophet are taken, judged by Christ, and are then thrown alive into the Lake of Fire that is a portal to Hell fire.

The Saints of God are sent on missions to gather those who have survived the Great Tribulation and Day of the Lord as God poured out punishment on those who refused to turn from sin and evil as you can read in the Book of Revelation. Then the rebuilding of millions of cities, infrastructure, buildings to manufacture things, and billions of homes. These will house those who are raised in the

The Beginning of the Beginning

second resurrection and allow them to live during their time of judgment.

The Beginning of the Beginning

You can get a Paperback copy of these books by contacting me at the address on this page. Your books will be paperback measuring 5 ½ inches wide and 8 ½ inches long and will be about 1 inch thick. They are spiral bound which allows them the ease of being opened up and turned back to lie flat as you read them. I have read that this is the best and most lasting binding for paperback books. Some time in the future, I hope to be making these books available as electronic copies such as EPUB and later possibly on Kindle where my costs will be less as the books will not have to be printed and shipped.

Thank you for your interest and support. Please write to me



and tell me which paperback book you would like, your return address, and these books will be sent free of charge to you as long as I can afford to do so. If you are able and wish to do so, you can send a donation of \$10 or whatever

you are able to send for each book for USA orders to help make these books available to those who are not able to send a donation. Make your checks out to *Richard O'Decatur*.

Postal mail address:

R. Wayne Publishing Co.

Attention: Books by Richard O'Decatur

108 Kimbrough Ct.

Clarksville, TN 37043

For any comments about my writings or what I believe, please contact me, the Author, ***Richard O'Decatur*** At the address above or by email: richardodecatur@gmail.com

Checkout my Website: AttainingBibleTruths.com

To find well over a hundred Articles that amount to over a thousand pages written by me, the Author, ***Richard O'Decatur*** and others that you can read on my website from my voluminous book: ***Christian Beliefs, Doctrines, and Practices Based on the Holy Scriptures, Not Traditions of Men.***